

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 221-225

Chapter 221

Britney encouraged them to drink up some more and looked at her boyfriend, Matt. "You too!" she spoke. "You have to drink more, you hear that?"

Annoyance spiked in Matt's heart but a smile was still plastered on his face. "Definitely, my dear! I'll listen to whatever you ask me to," he responded.

After a while, everybody finally entered the lobby hall of the Lotus Bar and Lounge. The lobby was on the first floor, and the atmosphere was lively. Jack and the others found a private room and sat inside.

This private room was separated from the outside with tempered glass in between. Whatever happened outside the private room could be seen, but this could be resolved by pulling the curtain on the tempered glass.

"Dear Sirs and Madams, if you'd like to use this private room, the minimum consumption will be 50 thousand dollars. The price in this menu is for your reference when you're ordering snacks and alcohol!" A lovely server approached the group, showing the group her most beautiful smile. "There's no time limit, so you may have fun here until the sunrise!" the server continued.

"Jack, you don't think this is expensive, do you? Since there are a lot of us, a small private room can't fit us all. Moreover, we really want to help to save some hard-earned money of yours, so we've no choice but to pick a medium-sized private room." Carl said as he sat down and lying her leg over and across the other leg, an indifferent smile surfaced on his face.

"I think it'd be so much better if we go to the opulent big private room. They got a top-notch soundproof system there, and it's on the second floor too. You could watch everything from above like a king overseeing his kingdom! The best part there is a grand piano inside that big private room. Selena was an excellent pianist back then, and she graduated from The Bachelor Fine Arts in Dance! It's been a

long time since we've seen her dancing and playing the piano!" Rachel, on the other hand, whined unhappily about their room size.

"You're right. We've all graduated from the Fine Arts faculty. Unfortunately, I do think that the luxury big private room is a little too much for us. Besides, I heard that the minimum consumption in that huge room is a million!" Rosa chimed in with her own opinion, smiling bitterly. "My current pay is around 10 thousand at most. I can only go there once if I stopped drinking and eating and instead, work my butt off for 10 years." Rosa then turned around, facing Carl and asked, "Oh right! How're you doing now, Carl?"

Carl offered a small smile and replied to Rosa in a pretentious humble manner, "How am I doing? Nah. I'm doing so-so, just a shareholder of a tiny company. Annual income plus the bonus will be around 10 million dollars or so. I could only visit the big-sized private room in Lotus at most 10 times in a year."

"My goodness! I never thought that you were this successful! You're amazing!" Rachel responded in a surprising tone, "There are so many employees in my husband's factory, but the net earning is also around 10 million."

Rosa, with an envious expression over her feature, looked at Hugh and asked, "How about you, Hugh? You were helping in your folks' hypermarket store, right?"

Hugh smiled abashedly. "Yup, the same old job," he meekly replied. "We used to have only three stores, but now we've managed to expand to another seven stores. It's enough for house expenses, I'd say." Hugh was genuinely humble, not at all like Carl. Carl's humility was pretentious and intentional.

"It seems like I'm doing the worst here!" Trevor gave a bitter smile and continued, "I haven't attended my interview, so I'm kinda an unemployed person now."

"Hey, you just came back from overseas, right Trevor? It won't be hard for you to apply for an assistant manager in the Drake family's company. I heard that for this position, the monthly salary can be up to 20 to 30 thousand dollars!" Britney responded, smiling. "Not to mention, your lovely girlfriend is the supervisor of that company and can surely help. This job belongs to you!"

At the end of her speech, Britney cast her glance towards Selena and continued in a mocking tone, "Well. You'll never be as bad as someone who picks up trash for a living, will you Trevor?"

"Honey, I never thought that you knew how to dance and play the piano. Let's go to the big private room! I want to see you dancing and playing the piano!" Jack said to Selena excitedly, ignoring Britney completely.

Everyone who was boasting confidently a moment ago went silent in a blink of an eye. Their jaws dropped and their eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers.

Chapter 222

"Wow! We didn't hear it wrong, did we? Are you talking about the big, opulent, private room of Lotus Bar and Lounge?" Rachel was taken aback. She started to doubt that she heard it wrongly. Jack wanted to go to the room that had a million-dollar price tag as its minimum consumption?

Everyone in the scene was suspicious of Jack's words. 'How could Jack request for the big room when he did not even have the spending power for the middle room?' they questioned.

"Didn't you say there's a piano there? I want to listen to my wife playing the piano. We have to go there." Jack shrugged.

"That room is so expensive... No way, we're not going there! I'll play piano for you when I'm free. Be a good boy for me, okay?" Selena rolled her eyes at Jack, and continued, "We've already spent more than 5 million for two cars today! You think your wallet is bottomless? Don't squander anymore!"

"Huh? Porsche 911 for 5 million dollars? Are you kidding me? Have you ever seen a Porsche, Selena? You've already exposed yourself!" Dylan interrupted the couple in a mocking tone. "You should at least see how fishes swim even if you haven't enjoyed them!"

"They were saying two Porsche 911s and that the price will be around 5 million for two. Don't twist their words!" Rachel echoed in a sardonic tone, laughing uncontrollably. "They wouldn't make such a shallow

joke, okay?”

“Stop faking your spending power! If you really have 5 million, take it out and treat us tonight in this medium room! That big room of Lotus is for world class businessmen to have their business discussion. I don’t even dare spend money alone there.”

Carl grinned sardonically. “Stop pretending! I can’t bear it anymore!”

Matt, who stayed quiet all the time, finally voiced out, “You have my respect for being the most pretentious couple, echoing one another! How shameless!”

He then looked at his ex, Selena and said, “Selena Taylor, are you trying to prove that you’re doing better than I am? Do you really have to do so? Don’t you dare to think that we didn’t know what happened to you in the past few years! You think you could cover it up by not contacting us all this while?”

“I agree! Who doesn’t know that you had been cast out by the Taylor family, couldn’t find a job anywhere, and was forced to pick up trash for a living? Someone even saw you picking up trash with a kid! What now? Trying to fake your wealth in front of us? Is it so hard for you to admit that you’re actually poor?” Britney stepped forward and chimed in perfectly.

She then continued, “If you really want the big private room, ask me. I’m the richest and wealthiest here! Our family, the Lee family, is a third-class aristocrat family! A million is a mere peanut to us!”

“You’re right. I was forced to pick trash for a living, it’s nothing to be ashamed of,” Selena’s face dropped and replied, icy-cold as she did so. “But that was before. Now I’m with Jack, and we both have proper jobs with medium range salaries. It’s not as bad as you think. It’s enough for us to live comfortably.”

“Wow! You sure? You have a job?” Matt smirked. “What kind of job can you do? A bodyguard? I’m so curious!”

A wry smile hung on Selena's face. "You're right. Jack is indeed a bodyguard right now, but he's so much better than you anyway. Do you have a job now? Or your own business?" she retorted expressionlessly.

"Oh, I forgot! You, too, have a job! Your job is to please Miss Britney, right? She's the only daughter in the Lee family, and you'll get all her money when you marry her, am I right?" She continued bluntly. "Tsk, tsk, tsk. I knew you pretty well back then. Your two criteria for a life partner is good money and her being the only child of the family."

Chapter 223

"Bullsh*t!" Matt snapped.

Selena's words pierced right through his weak point, sharply. Matt's expression indicated that he was truly exasperated. "We love each other earnestly. It's not your place to critique and destroy our relationship! What about yourself, huh? Married to a soldier must be the most agonizing incident in your life! It's such a waste that an attractive woman like you married a poor man."

Selena burst out laughing. "That's because I'm not you, and I never wanted to leech off of somebody. Besides, I don't think that my man isn't excellent enough. Just a moment ago, he was willing to spend a million just to see me dancing! What do you think of that? It says that my man loves me more than anything and is willing to spend for me even if there's only a hundred thousand in his bank account!" Selena chuckled as she spoke. She leaned toward Jack and held his hand with pride.

Jack was a little shocked by Selena's action, and he felt happiness blooming within him. This was the first time Selena initiated the first move in public!

"Well said, dear! Our love is true love and theirs is just living under a roof together!" Jack was overly excited that he turned his face toward Selena and stamped his lips on her cheek.

Selena's face immediately turned as red as a tomato. She never thought that Jack, this sneaky yet adorable b*stard, would exploit this opportunity to plant a kiss on her cheek! The sight of Selena's gorgeous face searing with blush harbored the jealousy in the others and further induced their poor self-esteem. Although Jack was a bodyguard and seemed like someone who was incapable of anything, he

was able to make Selena his wife! This point itself had already made others drown in envy. Besides, their relationship seemed wonderful and stable!

Matt, on the other hand, was seething inwardly. He recalled that during the one-year relationship with Selena back in university, Selena was so conservative that she had only let Matt hold her hand, let alone a small peck on her cheek. That was what made his fury spring to life and decided to sleep with Rachel; his childish act to madden her. Of course, right now, the scene before him defeated him terribly.

“Keep on boasting! If you’re as capable as you say you are, let’s go to the big private room then!” Matt gritted his teeth with anger, and before long, he sneered, “The minimum consumption in that room is one million. Listen carefully: one million, minimum consumption. It also means that it might exceed that amount. Since you have the gall to treat us, please don’t be a crybaby when you realize you have no money for it!”

“Humph, forget it! He’s just a poor, stinky, and useless bodyguard. How much money will he have to treat us there? Moreover, it’s been only a few days since he returned from the military, right? This bodyguard job is probably a new job, and he might not have gotten his first pay yet!”

Britney sang a duet with Matt delightfully, seeing that her boyfriend was hostile with the couple.

“A useless bodyguard?” Selena was speechless for a moment. “Have you seen a useless bodyguard with 20 million pay a month? I really don’t understand what you’re bragging about when your salary is like a peanut next to my husband’s.”

“Wow! Your joke is getting better now! Which family on the earth can afford a 20 million bodyguard? Even the Drake family’s bodyguards aren’t paid such a high salary!” Britney was so angry that she could feel her resentment growing inside her like a tumor. She stepped forward and yelled, “Don’t think that I don’t understand the market. I belong to a third-class aristocrat family! I know exactly how much a bodyguard earns!”

“Oops, sorry! Then you really don’t understand the market. I do so happen to be the Drake family’s bodyguard, and for them to hire me for only 20 million, it’s a boon!” Jack retorted.

Chapter 224

After hearing that statement, everyone present almost burst out laughing. How outrageous would it be to say that the Drake family benefited from hiring a bodyguard for 20 million? If that was the case, it would mean the family members were complete idiots.

“how comical this is! A bodyguard for 20 million and they benefited from it? Please, they can hire a few hundred bodyguards with that kind of money. Excellent ones, even!” Rachel cackled out loud.

“Right, are you taking the Drake family for a bunch of fools? Not even their commander gets paid that much, right?” Carl added.

The statement Selena made earlier was basically saying Jack was more impressive than them, and they were more offended than what they let on. They could not understand how a mere bodyguard could be better than them who made more than 10 million annually.

“It doesn’t matter if you guys believe me or not, but that’s how much my husband is getting paid. That was personally assured by Miss Tanya herself, so it can’t be a mistake!” Selena was incredibly furious as she originally thought of this as a simple casual gathering. She never expected that there would be a few snobs among them.

Moreover, if she had known both sugarbabies Matt and Rachel would be here, she would never have come. Since the situation had already progressed to the way it was, she had to fight for her pride. She had been very patient toward them from the start, yet she did not expect them to keep testing her patience by calling Jack a useless soldier. If it was not for Jack fending off the enemies in the frontlines, would they still be able to enjoy their comfortable and peaceful life?

“Alright, alright. Everything you say is true, okay?” Trevor chuckled. He then turned toward Selena and asked, “Didn’t you get a job as well? What job is that? Share it with us and let’s see if it’s better than the job I found.”

Selena frowned. She was rather close with Trevor and Hugh when she was still studying back then, and she was only willing to come this time mainly because of them both. She did not expect Trevor would

come forward at this moment to target her as well.

Selena did not answer his question. Instead, she questioned him back. "You're going for an interview tomorrow, right? For the position of a manager's assistant? 20, 30 thousand per month? What company is that to have offered such high wages to an assistant?"

Trevor chuckled. "It happens to be a prominent company. It's Drake Dynasty Real Estate under the Drake Group. Not to mention, they're currently in charge of a major project, the same project over at South Hill Real Estate!"

Trevor had a prideful look on his face as he pompously added, "Don't worry. I'll nail the interview tomorrow, no doubt!"

"Really now? That confident?" Selena frowned. Was that not the same company she was currently working in? "Which department manager's assistant are you interviewing for?" she prodded further.

"The procurement manager's assistant," Trevor answered, another short chuckle escaping his lips. "My girlfriend happens to be a supervisor there as well, so my interview will go on smoothly. Besides, my resume is pretty impressive too. When they heard that I returned from overseas, who wouldn't worship me? It doesn't matter if I had wasted my life overseas or didn't learn much... Who knows what exactly I was up to overseas, right?"

"Moreover, with the sheer mention of being abroad—on top of me boasting a little on my resume—would naturally win over people these days. Of course, my girlfriend is the supervisor there, so she can help put a good word in for me. How is that not a guaranteed success?"

Trevor then added, "I heard that the procurement manager is a beautiful lady. However, she might've had an affair with the Drake family's young master to be in that position. Otherwise, how could she be a manager the moment she entered the company?"

Trevor had a smug look on his face.

Jack felt awkward while he listened on the side. Was this manager he mentioned not Selena?

“That female manager had an affair with the Drake family’s young master? Your girlfriend told you that? Does she have any proof?” Selena’s expression dimmed. She did not expect Sonia would say that about her behind her back. It was a good thing she came to this reunion, and it was fortunate that Sonia was absent today. Selena might never know about this if this did not happen.

Chapter 225

“Is it necessary for proof now?” Trevor cackled out loud and spoke in a very prideful manner, “Do you know who my girlfriend is? She’s a distant relative to the Drake family and had worked there for a good number of years now. She should be the one getting promoted to the position of a manager, but that manager of theirs appeared out of nowhere. She’s attractive and dresses suggestively, so if she isn’t having an affair with the Drake family’s young master, would she even get special treatment like this?”

As he was making that statement, he continued with a much more exciting statement, “The previous manager only had about a few hundred thousand dollars per month but when this manager enters, guess how much she makes a month? A monthly wage of over a million! Now you tell me: isn’t that fishy? This woman has to be hooking up with the young master and had sexual relationships with him privately. How else would she get such treatment?”

“Too many women are making a living based on their appearance these days!” Matt joined in.

“Do you think anyone is exactly like you?” Selena was beyond furious as she gave him a murderous glare.

“I wasn’t even talking about you! What are you getting so worked up for?” Matt had a very dissatisfied look on his face.

“You guys are making baseless accusations. You’re asking for a beating!” Jack’s expressions dimmed as he subtly clenched his fist.

However, Selena who was sitting beside him shook her head and signaled at him not to act so rashly. Jack held himself back after seeing Selena's reaction.

"I heard Rachel mentioned that you're a rash brute for being a soldier previously. I see that it's true. You keep saying that people are asking for a beating for minor things. Do you think that everything can be solved with violence? You have to use your head next time!" Hugh's girlfriend rolled her eyes at Jack.

Jack laughed. "As long as you're powerful enough, everything can be solved through violence," he spoke. "If a single punch can't, then two punches can do the trick!"

After he was done speaking, he immediately spoke to the waitress, "Hey, lady, mind switching the room for me? I won't be stingy on your tips later if you're still going to be our waitress!"

After the waitress heard that, she was immediately delighted. "Thank you, Sir!" she beamed.

After she was done, the waitress immediately led them to a different room. "This way, please!"

"Don't be too happy so soon, Miss. This man just so happens to be a veteran and now he's working as a bodyguard. Do you genuinely think his monthly wage is 20 million?"

"Even if it's true, he was only back a few days ago. He hasn't even gotten his paycheck yet, so I think he might not be able to foot the bill later. Everyone will be detained here!"

Everyone got into the elevator and arrived at the second floor together. From the second floor, everything on the first floor could be observed. The second floor encircled the entire perimeter and its middle portion was empty.

The huge building looked like an overturned bowl.

“No, I believe him. He was willing to fork out a couple million just to listen to his wife play the piano. Someone who loved their wives this much would never lie!” the waitress replied with a smile. Since she had worked as a waitress here for a long time, she had seen and met all kinds of people. She believed in her judgment.

“Since you have a sweet tongue, your tips tonight won’t be lower than 10 thousand!” Jack replied, a smile on his face as he did so. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 226-230

Chapter 226

“10 thousand dollars?” Rosa gasped after hearing that; Jack must have been lying.

She had worked so hard for a month only to receive meager pay. To put it in a much better way, she was only a supervisor yet she felt extremely exhausted. Yet, here Jack was: casually telling the waitress that he would give her 10 thousand as her tip. That was too much, was it not?

“Thank you so much, Sir!”

The pretty waitress was also very delighted. The usual source of income would be the commissions they make from the alcohol they serve. Nonetheless, these commissions were very low. Adding that to their base salary, the total was not even close to 10 thousand.

Indeed, there would be customers who gave them tips, yet getting 3 to 5 thousand as their tip would make their day.

Even if their guests were some young masters from second or third-class aristocratic families, a generous tip from them would be about 2 to 3 thousand dollars; waitresses like them were very insignificant to their eyes. If they enjoyed their company, they would reward them. If they did not, they might even yell at them.

“Don’t worry about it!” Jack smiled; the impression the woman left on him was positive. She basically would not say anything she should not on top of keeping a professional smile on her face. She looked very respectful.

Suddenly, Trevor chuckled. “A boastful man you are,” he commented. “The thing is that someone actually bought it!”

Upon noticing Trevor was going out of his way to pick on Jack, Selena smiled and said, “Trevor, you said it yourself earlier: You didn’t study much while you were abroad. You spend every day enjoying life there then boast about it when you return. You’re telling me that you want to work as that manager’s assistant with that behavior? I think you’re a little too full of yourself!”

“Full of myself?” Trevor cackled out loud and said, “There isn’t much of a choice for that female manager. My girlfriend faked a preliminary interview and rejected everyone that came for that position, leaving only my resume and another girl’s resume. However, that girl doesn’t even exist. Till then, all Sonia needs to do is tell their manager that the girl caught a cold and couldn’t make it!”

“That means I’m the only one left to be chosen. Besides, I had been abroad for some time, and that fake resume won’t be more outstanding than mine. So you can tell me now: If it isn’t me who will attend the interview, who else can it be?”

The longer Trevor spoke, the more prideful he became. “This is called benefiting from having a mole on the inside. Do you understand?”

“that’s pretty impressive!” Selena chuckled before looking at Rosa beside her. She said, “That’s right, Rosa, your monthly wage is about 10 thousand, right? That’s not bad, what job is that?”

A sigh escaped Rosa’s lips. “It’s not worth mentioning. That tiny company is depressing. Sometimes, they wouldn’t pay me for the overtime I did. I’m just a supervisor and yet I had to do a lot of things outside my job scope. Moreover, it’s construction work! Such meager pay. Now that I’ve paid my rent, I don’t have much left to save up after my meager budget for food and other necessities.”

Upon bringing up her job, Rosa cracked a bitter smile as she said, "Supervisor on paper but in reality, I'm busier than anyone else..."

After she was done speaking, she looked at Selena and said, "Selena, I remembered you being quite capable at work. Why don't you come work for my company? I'll talk to my manager to see if they're able to offer you some work. Now that you're exiled from the Taylor family, you're no longer the lady you once was and you should accept reality now, okay?"

After Selena heard that statement, her heart was moved. It seemed Rosa cared about her a lot since she hoped that Selena could have a better life for herself.

It was then when Hugh spoke out, "Yeah, my purpose of inviting Selena out today was to ask everyone if any of you have any suitable job for her. However, since Selena mentioned she got a job earlier and it's uncertain if it's real or not, I was a little shy to bring it up!"

"My factory lacks manpower to move things. If a pretty lady like you thinks it's okay, then you can come to work!" Dylan mused.

Rachel chuckled coldly before mocking her intentionally, "What are you talking about? Her husband makes 20 million a month. It doesn't matter if she works or not, right? Does she even need to do hard labor?"

"Fair point. I almost forgot about it!" Dylan laughed hysterically.

Chapter 227

Selena merely shrugged him off as she took out a name card and handed it to Rosa. "This is my business card, so just hold on to it first. The offer will be much better than your current job. I have faith in your abilities. You're a smart and hardworking person!"

"Alright, alright. I'll keep it." Rosa assumed Selena was on her high horse again. Still, she could not be bothered to expose her so she awkwardly laughed instead before shoving her business card into her

purse.

A cynical grin appeared on Matt's face. "Not bad; you can still recommend jobs to people. I didn't expect you to be recruiting, judging from the look of things. Your job isn't too bad!"

Selena simply ignored him in silence as they made their way to their luxurious private room.

"Holy sh*t. This is the luxury room? This is my first time here... It's so big!"

"The piano here is a Yamaha! The screen here is huge too!"

Rosa was extremely excited after inspecting every nook and cranny.

"Not bad! Not bad!"

Everyone else was also nodding in agreement.

"Jack, you said it yourself that you'd be footing the bill tonight. We won't fork out a single penny!" Britney once again reminded Jack. She was interested to see how long Jack could keep up his facade.

Jack nodded carefreely. "Of course. Order to your heart's content, guys!" he spoke. "Order anything, and we'll have as much fun as we can! Besides, it's not every day we get an opportunity to loosen up."

"Alright, alright. Bring the menu here and we'll order now. Everyone is drinking red wine right, and we'd be ordering the more expensive ones. Besides, the lowest one can spend here is a million. We're not going to order anything too cheap!" Trevor got seated and started ordering.

The veteran then turned to his wife. "Honey, I want to watch you dance!" Jack beamed.

Selena was flustered in an instant. "I haven't danced in years!" she squeaked. "Forget it, I'm too embarrassed!"

"Someone should be playing the piano while she dances, right? Who's playing? I haven't played in years and I think I've even forgotten how to play!" Hugh let out a bitter chuckle and said, "If one wishes to dance while someone plays, both must be in sync. If they are, it'll unite and become a beautiful symphony both visually and auditorily."

To this, Matt started chuckling coldly as he stared at Jack. "If Selena dances, it wouldn't be appropriate if we played the piano, right? Someone would be jealous if the duet turned out nicely, no?"

"That's difficult. If he's the one playing, he wouldn't be jealous."

Trevor chuckled coldly. "Of course, someone here didn't even have proper education. He could be playing a chaotic tune too," Trevor mocked, to which everyone started laughing. "How else can Selena dance to the music?"

In their eyes, Jack was nothing more than a mindless brute. How would he know a thing or two about the piano?

Never did they anticipate that Jack actually approached the piano, sat down, and said, "Honey, I'll play and you dance. Let's both perform a duet!"

Chapter 228

Selena became skittish right away. This fellow here was a soldier; how could he possibly know how to play the piano even though he was not always a mindless brute?

Music and dance would be extremely sacred to people who understood them as it was something that could connect souls. How could one not take it seriously?

She would not mind if her husband was to play poorly, but even if she was to dance majestically, she could never be in sync with a 'chaotic tune'.

Jack's level should not be too poor at the very least. Only then could she forcefully dance with his tune.

"F—Forget it. Everyone will be singing and drinking later anyway..." Selena laughed mirthlessly, her statement sounding more depressed than what she let on. Even in her eyes, there were shreds of disappointment and sadness inside.

She had not danced in a very long time, and she had almost forgotten that 'Selena' who used to dance so elegantly on the stage like a swan. She would feel different every time she got on stage to dance back then; it was as though the entire stage was hers and only hers. The cheers from the audience would make her feel incredibly fulfilled.

Of course, these were things of the past and she could no longer have the same feeling she felt from back then; the feeling of understanding the deeper meaning of a dance through her heart and soul.

"I think you should just forget about it. Your hands are made for swords and spears, so please don't embarrass yourself with elegant things like holding a pen or performing a dance!" Britney laughed, a cynical undertone detected in her chuckle.

"Matt, your piano skills are pretty impressive back then. It'd be a perfect performance if you play the piano and Selena dances. That'd be a perfect balance of music and dance!"

Rachel then added fuel to the flame, saying, "You're no longer together, but you've dated back then, no? Why don't you just give it a shot, Matt? I believe both of you will be a perfect match!"

Needless to say, she said all that to provoke Jack.

“Let’s begin, Honey!” Jack simply ignored her as he gently touched the black and white keys; it was as though he was caressing a baby’s skin.

A press on a key made Jack titter. Five years of battle had almost made him forget about his childhood dream.

His childhood dream was to become a pianist. He had never expected he would become a soldier. Even more so, he never expected he would be fighting on the battlefield to defend the borders. Of course, times have changed and he no longer held regrets. It was being on the battlefield that he felt true friendship between his comrades. He felt the fighting spirit between his comrades. If it were not for the countless near-death encounters in the last five years, he would not have been honed into such a sharp blade.

A simple touch made his thoughts race endlessly. Soon, he found himself swimming in childhood memories as he immersed himself within that sacred ground. All of that turned into an orchestra of music and notes surrounding him as they danced.

“No way... He knows how to play the piano!” Britney was so shocked that her lower jaw almost fell to the ground. Was this brat not a takeout delivery boy that had gotten enlisted as a soldier for five years? Surely there was no piano on the battlefield.

Moreover, Jack was just an ordinary man back then, and if he could keep himself warm and fed, it would have made his day. How could he still have the time and money to learn how to play music?

Yet, here Jack was. His fingers seemed to be moving on its own and the harmonic tone made everyone feel as if they were floating mid-air. It soon picked up the pace and turned softer like water flowing under the bridge.

“Good lord. This... This is way better than our piano teacher back then. He’s amazing!” Hugh gulped,

completely flabbergasted.

“He... He’s playing the Croatian Rhapsody!” Rachel was electrified. That was how Maxim described music as it mainly focused on the aftermath of war.

Chapter 229

The aftermath of a war, a dusty battlefield, mountains of corpses laid dead while a crow wept under the setting sun. This single song surprised everyone as their hearts were instantly touched, so much so that those images came alive in their minds. At that instant, they no longer perceived Jack as a mindless brute. No one else dared to think he knew nothing about music. Instead, they were the complete idiots.

Selena was completely stunned. She never knew Jack’s piano playing had already reached such godly heights.

“What are you still standing here for? Hurry up and go!” Rosa nudged Selena soon after she snapped out of her trance.

It was only then did Selena eventually settle back into reality. Selena then gracefully lowered and did a split while raising her body slightly, resembling the image of an injured swan.

Her body was lithe and flexible as both arms swayed along to the music. At that moment, both music and dance started to merge into a single entity. With a counter spin of her legs, her body started to slowly get up as she was completely lost in the harmonic balance of music and dance, unable to escape. She had returned. Everything had returned. Selena felt like she had once again returned on stage and found the familiar feelings she felt back then; that excitement and determination she felt in her heart way before.

The melody stopped and the dance concluded! Everyone was entranced, and they stayed that way for a good amount of time.

“That was magnificent!” Dylan suddenly started clapping, and everyone else could not help but

applauded them thunderously.

It no longer mattered how much they looked down on Jack before; all of them were clapping. They were praising their duet, their emotions sincere from their hearts and free from their feuds and petty grudges. Their souls seemed to be completely cleansed at this instant.

“That was amazing. A perfect performance, perfectly done!” Hugh was extremely emotional, at the brink of tears. “I’ve never expected even after graduating so many years ago, I’d still be able to hear such a powerful piece of music and witness such a perfect dance,” he gushed. “Both aspects were perfectly combined.”

Hugh was so emotional, he repeated the word ‘perfect’ four times.

“Honey, you compliment me well!” Jack smiled as he got up.

“You played it exceptionally well!” Selena was slightly flustered as she rolled her eyes at Jack. However, her heart felt like it was slathered with a sweet essence as though she had eaten honeydew.

“Right. If anyone wants to play, go ahead. I want to grab a drink!” Jack smiled as plenty of snacks and red wine were already brought in.

“Forget it. After your impromptu recital just now, we don’t want to embarrass ourselves!” Hugh waved his hand and he no longer dared to mention he was a music graduate in front of Jack ever again.

“Let’s drink, let’s drink!” Dylan was still lost in the music earlier. “Good lord. After listening to that, I feel like money is merely worldly possession, so let’s all drink to our hearts’ content. Come on guys, cheers!”

Jack smiled at Selena as Dylan with his rounded waist chugged down a glass full of wine. It made him seem more like a mindless brute than Jack would ever be.

Chapter 230

Rosa pulled Selena to a corner.

“Selena... They said that your husband was a mindless brute and I genuinely believed them,” Rosa whispered. “I didn’t expect him to know how to play the piano, and he played it so well too. I don’t believe he’s just some grunt anymore... Anyone who knows how to play the piano can never be a mindless brute!” she added. “I think he’s a well-versed person as he knows how to fight and play the piano!”

“Hmm... Has he become god-like to you now?” Selena chuckled humorously as it seemed this change in attitude was a little too quick.

Rosa sighed. “After thinking about it earlier, that has to be some nonsense Rachel concocted. Man, that woman has gone too far since she never seemed to like you even in our university days. She always assumed you were stealing the spotlight away from her. We’ve all graduated, and it’s been so long. I thought it’s all behind us now and we don’t care much about the past. I didn’t expect she could be this petty!” Rosa seemed to have understood something as she then grabbed onto Selena’s hand and murmured, “I’m sorry. I misunderstood you a while ago.”

“Don’t worry about it, I didn’t really take it to heart anyway,” Selena assured her. “Besides, I offended Rachel this morning, so her trying to ruin me in my absence is well within my expectations!”

Selena offered a bright smile before adding, “Consider my offer well when you get back. You can help me out in my company since we lack the manpower.”

“Alright, I’ll think about it,” Rosa replied, a smile gracing her face before she tugged on Selena’s arm. “Let’s go pick some songs to sing!”

On the other side, Britney was sitting next to Matt as she whispered to him, “Do you know how much in total we’ve ordered?”

“How should I know? My job is to drink and drink some more. If it’s not enough, we can order more. F*ck it, I refuse to believe a veteran would be able to fork out that much money. We’ll spend a little more and when he can’t pay up, the owner here will never let him leave!”

Matt was ruthless in the way he spoke, and he glanced at Jack from across the room. Jack was nothing more than a veteran, and no one expected Jack would be able to marry Selena. Selena’s current figure seemed as though she had never given birth before. She was still as stunning as she was back then. Not to mention the way Selena looked when she danced. She looked like a pure and innocent swan. Her beauty was mesmerizing, and the feeling of regret bubbled in him.

If only he persisted a little harder back then, he might have been the one married to Selena. Even if he was not married to her, he might still end up dating Selena. A shame he could only be with Britney, whom he had no feelings for whatsoever. Dissatisfied was he in silence.

“Our bill is over 1.3 million dollars. That idiot is doomed!” Britney chuckled and took a sip of red wine from her wine glass before saying, “Alright, I need to use the washroom real quick!”

When Britney was on her way to the washroom, she noticed an extremely intricate display case in the hallway housing two bottles of red wine. Moreover, there were two servers guarding that case while every corner around the red wine had spotlights shining at it. It was very attractive to look at.

“What are you looking at?” Rachel who had just exited the washroom noticed Britney was staring at blank space in front of her. Rachel approached her while she giggled.

“Rachel, do you think Jack has the money to actually foot the bill?” Britney frowned after she pondered about it.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 231-235

Chapter 231

“Impossible. Where does his money come from anyway?”

Rachel spoke without hesitation, "He did it for his pride, he's boasting!"

"But he can't be that dumb, right? This is the Lotus Bar and Lounge, and the owner is a member of a first-class aristocratic family. He isn't going to dine and dash now, is he? Does he have a death wish?" After Britney broke it down in detail, she started to doubt if Jack had enough money to pay the bill.

"Fair point!" In that instant, Rachel was no longer as certain as she was. "I doubt that Jack knows who the owner is, considering he's just returned from the army," she commented, "so how would he know so much?"

"I think you make a much better point!" Britney nodded then swiftly said, "Hey, I heard when those veterans came back, those who stayed for quite some time in their department would be able to get a good sum of money since they contributed to the country, and they'd be able to retire in glory. It seems Jack might've gotten some money."

"So you're saying it might be around 1 or 2 million? This idiot decided to spend every penny tonight just to save his wife's pride?" Rachel was a little shocked as she continued, "So that's why he was so confident when he spoke. Moreover, he enrolled his child to school this morning and paid up. I thought he borrowed that money, but it seems he does have some money!"

"Yeah, but I'm guessing it's not much and should only be a million or two. Otherwise, those two wouldn't come here in a cab!" Britney continued her breakdown, "Because that money didn't come easy, and since Jack risked his life for that money, they spent meagerly. It's just that they didn't expect us to look down on them and Jack is known to act pretentiously. To stop his wife from getting bullied, he agreed to switch up the room. Don't you think this is the case?"

"Good lord, you're on to something now. You're not the lady of a third-class aristocratic family for nothing!" Rachel chuckled immediately and sneered, "Since people like him loved to pretend, we'll allow him to. Besides, we've spent so much of his money, it might hurt him after this!"

"Exactly!" Britney's expression suddenly dimmed. "We can let them off the hook so easily... What if they

do have the money to pay our bills tonight?" she fretted. "Also, Selena is Matt's ex-girlfriend and I just can't stand that woman. I don't want them to walk out of Lotus Bar and Lounge today, so we can't let them off the hook so easily!"

"But, what can we do when they have money?" Rachel sighed. "I too wish to see them struggling to pay the bill then be caught by the boss and, heck, might even get beaten to a pulp," she spoke bluntly. "I'd be a happy gal!"

Both women bonded through their similar vile behavior!

Britney pointed at both bottles of red wine. "Say, would those two bottles of red wine be expensive since they're guarded by two waiters?" she snickered.

"You mean to say?" Rachel seemed to have thought of something as her eyes lit up.

Both women then swiftly approached the display case and asked the waiters, "Is this wine expensive? What are you guys standing guard here for? Is it only for people to admire?"

"Ladies, both of these bottles of red wine happen to be our establishment's most prized possessions. They are produced in..."

After they were done explaining, a waitress then concluded, "This bottle costs 6.66 million dollars and only less than 10 bottles exist in this world. Drinking a bottle would mean one less bottle in the world."

"Perfect!"

A glint of sinister intent could be seen in Britney's gaze as she immediately said, "Send a bottle to our room. We want one!"

Chapter 232

“You want a bottle? This costs 6.66 million; it’s too expensive!” Rachel gasped. “How can you order something this expensive? Are you trying to kill him?” she stammered.

Britney chuckled menacingly and replied, “What are you afraid of? He said it himself: We can order anything we want. Besides, if we didn’t order a little more, how can we get him to stay behind?”

After some thoughts, she immediately exclaimed, “No, no, no. A bottle isn’t enough...we’ll take both. I’m quite interested to taste what this establishment’s prized possession tastes like!”

“Two bottles? That’ll be over 13 million including the 1.3 million earlier. Oh, good lord, it’s too expensive... It’s over 14 million!” Rachel was flabbergasted. She wanted Jack to be in a tough spot and also wanted him to be embarrassed silly, but... Would spending over 14 million not pressure him to death?

“Didn’t you notice how he was acting earlier? He claims to be rich and told us to order anything we want so blatantly. This time, we have to teach this brat a very good lesson!”

Britney pulled Rachel away from where they initially stood and whispered, “This is an extremely rare opportunity, though.”

Britney suddenly scoffed at the thought of something. “That reminds me... Didn’t he mention he makes 20 million a month? Didn’t he also say he bought two Porsches? Even we don’t have the heart to buy one and he bought the 911 model. This time, he’s in for a world of bad luck!”

“Right, right, right!” Britney said with mocking laughter. “Failing to foot the bill will put them to great shame, and worst of all, they’d be offending a first-class aristocratic family since this business belongs to them!”

Britney chuckled before leading Rachel back to where those wine bottles were and said, “We’ve decided to have both bottles, so send it to Room 207! When you arrive, you don’t need to ask a thing; just open

it for us!”

“Well, both bottles will add up to about 13 million. Are you sure you want to open both bottles at the same time, ladies?”

One of the waiters was already startled and wondered if he had misheard them. No guests had ever ordered that wine for the two to three years the bottles were placed there. Even if they were young masters, they would give up after asking for the price.

Besides, most people would feel spending more than 6 million for a bottle of wine would not be worth it.

“Yeah, just open them when you bring them in. We were also like that when we ordered plenty of wine bottles previously!” Britney nodded with a smile.

Soon, both Britney and Rachel returned to the room. It was Jack’s first time to come to a place like this. It was a one-of-a-kind way to enjoy life and listen to Selena’s sweet voice singing.

“Come now, Brother, let’s drink. This will be a toast for you defending us and our country in the frontlines. This is my respect to you!” Hugh had a grin on his face as he approached Jack, a glass of wine at hand.

“Thank you!” Jack smiled.

After clinking glasses with him, he chugged down the wine immediately.

“That felt good!” Hugh laughed as he also chugged the wine down with a single gulp.

No one expected that even Dylan the alcoholic would also sit with them at this moment. “I didn’t expect your piano skills to be this good, Jack,” he started, “and you’re pretty handsome, too. I see now why a

beauty like Selena would be your wife! Although I hated you this morning, you have my respect tonight!”

Jack was flustered. He did not expect Dylan would say something like that after drinking so much.

“Come on now, I need to drink with you. At least as gratitude to your treat. You’re treating me to drink in such a lavish spot. I personally can’t bear spending this much money!”

Chapter 233

Dylan’s face was flushed red from drinking too much. It seemed he was more talkative after some drinks. Matt was drinking alone on the other side of the room. He was chugging down wine after wine; he wanted nothing more than to bankrupt Jack.

“What are you doing? Why are you drinking so much?” Britney spotted him the moment she returned and immediately went to his side.

“Doesn’t he just love being pretentious? This wine I’m drinking costs 50 thousand a bottle. F*ck it, I’ll keep asking for more wine after I’m done with this. Let’s see what he’ll do when he doesn’t have enough to pay.”

Matt turned to look at Jack on the side with a sinister chuckle.

“Ah, then let me tell you...” Britney immediately leaned to Matt’s ear and whispered everything to him.

“That expensive!” was Matt’s first response, a gasp escaping his lips. However, a shred of sinister intent flashed across his gaze and said, “Good. Let’s do that since he said it was on him anyway. I won’t help him even a penny.”

“I wonder if he’d kneel and beg us to split the bill with him later.” Britney cackled out loud and bragged,

“No one will agree to it, especially when Rosa’s pay is only 10 thousand a month and has basically no savings. She can’t afford to fork out any money when he splits the bill!”

Matt laughed then poured Britney a glass of wine before handing it to her. He said, “You truly are smart. Those two bottles would cost him his life.”

“Well, that’s not too certain. What if his monthly pay turns out to actually be 20 million dollars?” Britney took a sip of red wine before saying that while chuckling coldly.

“Only a fool would believe him. A mere bodyguard could have a monthly wage of 20 million? Do you take the Drake family for a fool?” Matt chuckled.

It was at this moment that a waiter brought in a bucket of ice and two bottles of red wine. After greeting them with a polite smile, the waiter opened both bottles of wine and placed it on the glass table.

The waiter soon got out. Jack and the others did not notice what had happened as they were busy singing and drinking, but both Britney and Matt cracked a grin.

That pretty waitress who was standing on the side and had been serving them all this time noticed the bottles and frowned. After some thought, she walked out.

However, it did not take her long to return. Her expression turned bitter after she noticed Britney pouring a drink for everyone at the moment.

She had gone out to gather some information. Supposedly, two women from this room had made the waiter serve up those bottles of wine. She felt something was amiss when she connected the dots to Jack and Selena being a married couple. However, she dared not approach them to say much. All she could do was stand on the side and smile while waiting for everyone’s orders.

Eventually, Jack went out to use the washroom. After some thought, the waitress was too antsy that she

chased after him.

“Sir, Sir! I don’t know if I should, but I want to inform you of something.”

It was only when Jack made the return trip did the pretty waitress decide to approach him. “I... I feel like you’re a kind person and I’m worried you might be toyed by people, so I wish to ask you something. Don’t tell anyone it was me who told you, okay?”

“Toyed?” Of course, Jack was stunned for a moment, but he quickly recovered with a smile on his face. “Every scheme or plot will be useless in the face of true power! Tell me: who tried to trick me?”

Chapter 234

The waitress never expected Jack would still have the mood to crack a joke. His behavior made her giggle anxiously before she added, “Sir, I’m afraid you’ll need someone extremely powerful to back you up in addition to an extremely strong financial ability because you’ll need 14 million.”

“What do you mean 14 million?” Jack’s eyebrows furrowed.

“Oh no... You really have no idea, don’t you?” she murmured.

“Weren’t two bottles of red wine brought in earlier? Those that were claimed as extra orders? I didn’t notice it then but when I looked at the bottles, I knew something was off. Those happen to be the most prized possessions of our establishment. It’s 6.66 million per bottle! There’s only two in total, and they actually opened it!”

“I was so shocked that I had to sneak out to ask my colleague, and they claimed they were ordered by those two women. Oh, that’s right... They were that Matt’s girlfriend and that Rachel lady who made the order!”

The pretty waitress frowned and nervously asked, "What are you going to do? You didn't know about it, and it seemed those two were messing with you intentionally."

"Heh... I didn't expect both women could scheme so much!" Jack scoffed and looked at the pretty waitress in front of him. "Thank you for telling me this. Don't you worry. It's only over 10 million, and it's no problem for me!"

"Good if it's n—no problem at all!" The waitress let out a sigh of relief. "I think you and your wife are pretty close together so I decided to tell you," she explained. "Also, your piano performance earlier was very good. It was my first time listening to something this amazing!"

Jack chuckled at her praise. "Thank you for your kind praises!" Jack smiled and was getting ready to return.

"By the way, there's a boxing match on the third floor later. Only guests in the luxury rooms are allowed to watch. You guys can spectate later! Moreover, if any guests here can attempt that challenge and they win, the bill will be free! Moreover, they'll also win 3 million dollars!"

After some thought, the pretty waitress slowly explained, "Although you're a veteran, you can never—by any means—register for the challenge. The champion of the ring is just too powerful! He's from America, and the man is extremely huge and tall. I'm pretty sure he's over two meters. Those few people who came forward to challenge a few days ago, well...they're all beaten to death."

A long sigh escaped her lips. "Some people didn't take the challenge for the free bill. Some did it because he—an outsider—had murdered a few of our best fighters from our Daxia. They were very dissatisfied so they took that challenge."

The waitress sighed for the nth time and said, "That American is too scummy. Although everyone signed a waiver before each challenge, no one had been killed before. The fight stops when one of them yields. The worst-case scenario is just crippling someone. But this man... Ever since he came, he killed a lot of our people. He murdered them!"

The waitress clenched her fists and gritted her teeth just by relaying the information she knew.

When both countries were at war back then, each war would last a couple of years. Since Daxia won, Jack and the others could retire in glory. However, it seemed the Americans stepped foot on Daxia's soil to stir up the occasional trouble. Since both countries signed a truce, minor frictions like these would naturally be ignored. Minor hiccups like these boxing matches, of course. After both parties signed a waiver, they could murder Daxians with no recourse.

"F*ck!" After Jack listened to her, he could not hold himself back from swearing. "I have to join. I'm pretty sure he did all of that intentionally."

"No, don't. Good sir, I'm informing you because I wanted you guys to spectate since you had already spent this much, so you have the right to watch the match on the third floor."

Chapter 235

"Sir, he's too powerful and had ten consecutive wins..."

The startled waitress frantically tried to talk him out of it. She was afraid that it would cost Jack his life after what she had told him.

"Thank you so much for telling me. It'll be fine if I'm oblivious to it but since I already know now, that American will die!"

Jack left her with that cold statement before striding back to the room. "It seems our expenses will be saved," he spoke as his figure retreated back into the room.

"But...he's really...powerful!"

The pretty waitress frowned as she stared at Jack. Regretting her decision, she mumbled, "I shouldn't

have told him. He's so loving to his wife... What if he dies in the name of defending Daxia? That'd be bad!"

Time slowly went by and when it was almost 11 o'clock, everyone felt like they had enough to drink.

The taste of both bottles of red wine was amazing as both Jack and Selena drank a glass.

"Jack, it seems like these two bottles of red wine have an incredibly distinct taste over the rest, and that's strange. What's stranger is that Rachel seemed to have come to her senses and helped pour us a drink!"

After she was done speaking, she gasped and spoke in a slightly frightened tone, "Oh dear... Nothing's wrong with these two bottles, right? They wouldn't have been poisoned now, would they? Or..."

Jack felt awkward as he cracked a suppressed laugh. "Honey, I didn't expect your imagination would be this big, but don't you worry; they're not. Though, you'd know soon enough if there's anything fishy about those two bottles of wine!"

Jack stood up and was about to pay the bill.

"Oh boy, it's about time. Did everyone have a good time?"

Britney smiled immediately and said, "Of course. We're incredibly happy. I don't come here often to places like these. I didn't expect you, Jack, a bodyguard can afford to treat us here, in this place. I truly didn't expect it."

It was at this moment, a supervisor came in and smiled at everyone in the room. He said, "Ladies and gentlemen, since your room happens to be the highest spender tonight and also broke the record of our Lotus Bar and Lounge in the ten years since we've opened, our manager agreed to offer you guys an 8.8 percent discount!"

“Oh my! Really?” Selena was delighted as she said, “I didn’t mishear it, right? An 8.8 percent discount can save us a lot of money!”

Of course, it did not take long as realization dawned on her. “That’s impossible though, right? We’ve only spent 1.3 million. Isn’t the lowest spending rate here a million? How could we possibly break a ten-year record?”

“No way, right? Breaking the record just like that?” Dylan was dumbfounded as well. “Judging from the looks of things, people who came here were all spending on a million dollars budget, right? We merely spent a little more than that, and we broke a record?”

“I’m afraid that he still won’t be able to pay the bill even after the 8.8 percent discount!” Britney scoffed as she waited for everything to unfold.

Rosa and Hugh both looked at each other and were considerably worried if Jack had the money to pay the bill. If he did not, things would be bad.

“What do you mean 1.3 million? The total amount you guys have spent is 14.67 million. After the discount, it’d be 12.9 million. Our manager said he can round down the value, so all you guys have to pay is 12.9 million!”

The supervisor smiled and took out a few bottles of red wine. “That’s right, these are your gifts,” he spoke. “You guys can enjoy it back home.” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 236-240

Chapter 236

“Impossible... How could it cost 12.9 million? We’ve checked every order and it only totaled to 1.3 million. Even after adding a few bottles, it shouldn’t go past 1.5 million. How could it be this expensive?” Selena was flabbergasted, but the shock slowly sizzled into anger. “I think you’re scamming us; maybe you mixed it up yourselves,” she fumed. “Check it again and see if something went wrong!”

“Yes, something must’ve gone wrong. It shouldn’t be over 10 million, since we didn’t order that much!” Rosa was shaken as well. Based on her current salary, she would not be able to pay this off even if she worked here for the rest of her life.

“You did. Did you forget?” The supervisor frowned and added, “You’re not trying to get out of this, are you?”

She then looked around and pointed at the two empty wine bottles on the glass table before adding, “You ordered these signature bottles and you’ve finished those. Are you trying to get out of paying for it?”

Three more waitresses followed behind the supervisor. They were the ones who guarded the wine bottles. They were holding a few complimentary bottles they had prepared to give to the person paying the bill.

Laughing, one of them walked up and said, “You need to realize where you are right now. Listen to what people have to say about what happens if you don’t pay for your meal!”

“A signature bottle? What...what alcohol is this?” Selena frowned; something was off.

Indeed, she did sense that the wine from the two bottles tasted much different compared to the regular red wine when she drank them. She was just talking to Jack about this. Could that be the signature bottle?

“Our signature bottles have been here for years, and they’ve never been sold. There are two bottles, and one bottle costs 6.66 million...”

The supervisor smiled and began introducing the bottles. After that, she said, “You’ve ordered it, you’ve finished it, so you have to pay for it now.”

“W—We didn’t order it!” Selena was left speechless. “When did we order it? How could I have ordered such an expensive bottle of wine?”

Seeing Selena’s worried look, Rachel, Britney, and Matt could not help but smile coyly aside.

“What’s wrong? What signature bottles? I didn’t order them!” A tipsy Dylan was shocked as well. He grabbed the bottle and took a good look at it. “F*ck, this bottle is that expensive? I wasn’t really drinking wine; I was basically drinking money!”

“Get the manager here and get a few more people; these people drank the signature bottles. I thought I bumped into real billionaires who were willing to splurge with their money, but it looks like they’re playing dumb here, trying to get out of paying for it!” the supervisor said to one of the waitresses.

The beautiful waitress who was serving Jack and the others stood aside with a dark expression. Did Jack not say it would be fine? Why was he not saying a thing?

Seeing Jack was standing silently and pulled out a cigarette to light it, Britney sneered, “Jack, why aren’t you saying anything? You told us to order anything we wanted. Rachel and I ordered these bottles. What’s wrong? Can’t afford them?”

“What? Aren’t you two going a little overboard? How could you order such expensive bottles? Aren’t you obviously trying to set us up?!” Selena was angry beyond relief. She oh-so badly wanted to beat those two women.

Chapter 237

“Dear, you’re too...” Dylan never anticipated that his spouse would do something like this. Despite their altercation with the couple this morning, he had always looked down on people who used dirty tricks.

Rachel gritted her teeth and barked, “You can’t blame us, can you? Jack mentioned that we could order

anything we wanted, and we saw these two bottles. Is it wrong that we wanted to taste it?" Rachel scoffed. "If he couldn't afford it in the first place, don't pretend to be someone he's not and ask us to order anything we want!"

"Rachel, Britney is childish, and you know how her temper is. If she's messing around, do you have to do what she does as well?" Hugh's face was dark. Their spending had gone over 10 million dollars, and if Selena and Jack were forced to stay behind, what would happen then? If they could not pay, they might pay with their lives.

After all, this establishment was owned by a first-class family. The owner behind the scenes should not be offended at all. Even Hugh's girlfriend was no longer speaking. She did not expect that the others would order such expensive bottles.

"Who's making a scene at our Lotus Bar and Lounge?!"

At this moment, a plump woman walked in with several angry-looking men clad in black shirts. "Our signature bottles have been there for long, and no one has ever ordered them. After you ordered them and finished them, you're trying to not pay for it? We were planning to give you a discount and a few complimentary bottles. Are you trying to not pay for your meal?"

"Pay for it, Jack. You've said it yourself: we could order anything!" Britney sneered.

"That's right. Act like the size of your bank account; don't pretend to be someone you're not in front of us!" Matt chimed in, his gaze filled with disdain.

"This man and his wife are the hosts, we're just his guests, and this has nothing to do with us. If you want to capture or kill anyone, get them!" Seeing the number of men in the room, Rachel was terrified. She distanced herself from the crowd right away.

"Jack, what should we do? Where can we find that much money? If only we knew, we wouldn't have come here tonight. Some of these people are no longer the classmates from way back then. I think

they've changed... They've become devils!"

Selena was overwhelmed with regret. The restaurant was demanding over 10 million dollars at that moment; where would they find that kind of money? If they did run out of ideas, they might have to call the second daughter of the Drake family to see if she could help them out.

Jack merely chuckled in reply. "Don't worry, it'll be fine. This is nothing to your husband!"

Jack smiled nonchalantly. With a flick of his finger, his cigarette butt flew right into a wine bottle next to him. It might or might not be a coincidence, but it was staggeringly accurate.

"Tsk, tsk! How powerful, still playing dumb at this moment. If you're so rich, then please pay the bill!" Matt's gaze was filled with sarcasm. He had waited for this moment for too long.

"If you don't pay the bill, you and your wife might not live through tonight!" The men in black rubbed their fists together, and their faces seemed muscular. They seemed threatening.

Selena thought of something, and her eyes lit up. "Right, Jack, I nearly forgot. Aren't you friends with the Goddess of War? Why don't you call her and ask her for a loan to pay for this bill? Once you get your salary, we can pay her back with it."

Selena prayed that Jack was not making up stories and that he was genuinely acquainted with the Goddess of War.

Chapter 238

"War-the Goddess of War is his friend?"

The manager inhaled sharply after hearing that. Tons of people wanted to meet the Goddess of War; even if they got the chance to say a sentence to her, it would be of the greatest honor.

Many media houses wished to interview Eastfield's Goddess of War Lana Zechs but were all rejected by the cold Goddess. No one expected that the average joe in front of them was the Goddess of War's friend.

"No way, he knows the Goddess of War?" Britney inhaled sharply as well. If Jack was a friend of the Goddess of War, and a good one at that, she might be in trouble.

After all, Rachel and her had started this today, and she was considered the mastermind behind it. If Jack was going to use his connection with the Goddess of War to blame it on them, they and the entire Lee family would be finished.

"Impossible, do you really think the Goddess of War is that easy to be reached?" Matt sneered and said, "The honorable Goddess of War would require marshalls of a certain level to be able to reach her, right? He was only a soldier for five years so if he only saw the Goddess of War from afar while being on the frontlines, his claims of knowing her mean that many other people could say the same thing!"

"F*ck, this guy was just faking it!"

"I think he was just putting on a show with his wife and pretending to be friends with the Goddess of War so we could void his bill. Respecting him means respecting the Goddess of War, right?"

"Yes, that might be the case!" The men in black began laughing.

"Since it's late, the Goddess of War is probably asleep by now. I won't call and trouble her to come over since it's just over 10 million dollars!" Jack was nonchalant about it. He turned around and said to Selena, "Don't worry, everything will be fine!"

"Hey, look at how good you are at lying. Before you, no one would claim to be number one at it!"

“It’s only 12 million dollars? You don’t want to trouble her to come over? My God, who do you think you are? Even if it was Eastfield’s richest man James Drake standing here, the Goddess of War wouldn’t care to come over, would she? On the contrary, there’s a higher possibility for Mr. Drake to go over to see her!”

Britney crossed her arms in front of her chest, her face filled with disdain. Jack was lying about everything unrealistically.

After saying that, she sneered. “Look, seeing that Selena and Matt were university mates, both of you can just kneel before me and slap yourselves a few times while saying you’ll never pretend to be someone you’re not again. I’ll even pay for the bill tonight!”

“You want my wife and I to kneel before you and slap ourselves?” Jack was stunned, his expression turning dark.

Jack did not want to cause trouble but it did not mean he was a coward. He was willing to tolerate people looking down on him. He had been thinking that they were all his wife’s ex-classmates and Selena would not want to ruin any relationships. That was why Jack did not bother to stoop to their level.

However, he did not expect these people to ask for more. Not only did they secretly order the most expensive bottles of wine, they were now asking him and his wife to kneel down and slap themselves? As a man, he could not take this anymore no matter what. Moreover, he was Daxia’s only Supreme Warrior!

“You heard me right, that’s exactly what I meant. Kneel before me and my man, slap yourselves, and say you will stop pretending to be someone you’re not from now on!”

Britney continued looking arrogant, being merciless toward Jack and Selena. Jack looked over at Selena next to him. Selena was a little angry as well but seemed afraid of them. After all, they were people from a third-class family.

Chapter 239

Jack could not stand it anymore after seeing Selena's face. He walked over and slapped Britney twice.

"Slap!"

The sound was incredibly loud as the room instantly turned silent.

"Are you dreaming? My wife and I were willing to buy you drinks so you should be feeling thankful. On the contrary, you're asking us to kneel before you? You're still stuck in your princess dream, aren't you?" Jack's expression was ice cold. His gaze was filled with a terrifying aura.

Britney froze. She had never been hit in her life. She was the only daughter of the Lee Family so her parents treated her as the apple of their eyes and she had always been treated as the family's gem. She did not expect to be beaten by a bodyguard today.

"Matt, what are you standing there for?" Britney was pissed seeing how Matt was also terrified.

"F*ck you, what kind of man are you to hit a woman?" Matt clenched his fist and charged toward Jack.

Unfortunately, spoiled, pretty, and useless brats had no combat capabilities whatsoever. Matt was instantly kicked by Jack before landing on the sofa.

"Ah!" Matt screamed in pain while clenching at his chest.

"I'm telling you that you'll regret this!" Britney was pissed. She pointed at Jack and Selena, saying, "Fine, I was just thinking that if you couldn't afford it, I could help you pay the bill. Now I won't pay a single cent even if you kneel before me. I won't pay for it, so just wait till you get beaten up by the men of the Lotus Bar and Lounge!"

After saying that, she walked over to help Matt up. "The owner of the Lotus Bar and Lounge is the brother of a first-class aristocratic family's master. I'll wait and see how you two get out of here tonight!"

Jack sneered. "To me, the only things that matter are those who deserve to be hit and those who don't, as well as those who deserve to be killed and those who don't! If we were on the battlefield, you both would be dead by now!"

Jack paused after saying that and looked over at Britney. "Remember this, your family might spoil you in your house but I won't do the same!"

Selena sighed and asked Jack, "Jack, what should we do now? Can you afford to pay the bill?"

Jack smiled unexpectedly and said to the manager, "I heard that at 11 o'clock, there's a boxing competition on the third floor of your building, right? Customers of the luxurious private room will get to watch the competition as they're eligible to do so!"

"Right, so what? Do you want to watch it?"

The manager was stunned before adding, "If you want to watch it, there won't be a problem. You're eligible to do so but what does that have anything to do with you paying the bill?"

Jack smiled and replied, "Of course it has lots to do with paying the bill. Didn't you say that if someone joins the competition and wins, his bill would be voided?"

"That is the case, but are you saying that you want to sign up?"

The manager looked at Jack and shook her head. "Young man, if I were you, I'd rather kneel and apologize to this woman, kowtowing for 100 times than joining the competition. With that body of yours, your opponent would only need one punch to knock your brains out. There are already ten professionals

in Eastfield who died in the challenge. The opponent has already won ten matches consecutively!”

At this moment, the female manager stressed it again, “It’s ten consecutive wins!”

Chapter 240

“Young man, if you’re signing up, you’re just asking for death. It’s just as easy as killing an ant!”

“That’s right, the American is huge and strong. He’s almost two meters tall and his arms are thicker than your thighs. With that body of yours...”

The fighters began sneering after seeing Jack’s body.

“Tsk tsk, ten professionals were killed consecutively? This American is pretty rough!” Hugh lamented, “But previous competitors only used to injure the opponents, right? This man actually killed people?”

“America and Daxia have been at war for years. Although it has finally ended, there is still hatred from both sides!”

“Although the countries have been conducting diplomatic relations, there is still tension!” Rosa forced a smile and said, “Since it’s a competition and there are consent forms involved, the opponent will definitely be merciless!”

After saying so, she looked at Selena and added, “Selena, talk your husband out of it. Otherwise, if he dies, it’ll be a problem. Let’s come up with other solutions for the money. As long as he stays alive, anything can be solved!”

“He killed that many Daxians? I have to kill him! Moreover, if I win the competition, I could void the bill and earn three million dollars reward from it, isn’t that right?”

Jack clenched his fist as rage flashed through his eyes. His fighting spirit sent shivers down people's backs.

"Of course. If you want to die, we won't stop you! Since you dare to not pay for your meal here, you can pay for it with your life then!" The female manager sneered. Jack was definitely going to die in her opinion.

"Are you really going? The opponent is strong! Although you're pretty good, if you're no match for him then..." Selena was clear on the fact that Jack had seen too many bodies of his comrades on the battlefield. It was near impossible to stop him at the moment. Moreover, the opponent was someone from the enemy's side who killed many competition participants.

"Selena, don't worry. I have to go do this and I will win!" Jack smiled. He seemed relaxed as if he was making a casual remark.

"Okay, be careful. Think of me and our daughter!" Selena bit her lips before nodding.

Jack felt warmth in his heart. He held Selena's hand and said, "Don't worry, I'll just be cleaning out the trash. I have to kill that guy, regardless of it being for us or for Daxia!"

"Stop stalling, people have already gone up. If you're trying to die, hurry up, alright? I'm telling you this, if you die then the money you owe will have to be paid by your wife, understood?" The female supervisor became arrogant. She was no longer the gentle and polite person who had passed Jack his bill before this.

"great, this is great!" Britney began laughing, and her gaze seemed crazy. "Who knew that your lie about being friends with the Goddess of War would now be exposed and you'd be fighting in the ring. Tsk tsk, you're going in the ring just to pay the bill. Do you really think that after being a soldier for a few years, you can beat your opponent? I'll tell you this now, I heard that someone was beaten to death two days ago!"

“*sshole!” Jack’s eyes were filled with terrifying-looking blood vessels upon hearing that. After saying that, he walked toward the door and said, “I’ll kill this American bastard!”

“Go go, why aren’t you following him? What if he runs off? It’s a 12 million dollars bill. If he runs off, can you afford it?” Britney followed the crowd and sneered.

“you dared to hit me just now. You’re a rash man and I won’t stoop to your level. I’ll see how you get your brains blown up with kicks, or how you’ll look when your neck gets snapped in half!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 241-245

Chapter 241

“Right, I’ll snap a photo of you as a memory when that happens!” Matt was so angry that he said that with burning hatred.

“No one is allowed to use phones there...” The manager began reminding the crowd.

“Fine!” Matt was slightly disappointed.

Soon after that, the crowd arrived on the third floor. The third floor was a giant, sphere-shaped court; there were galleries everywhere and in the middle of it all was a boxing ring, lights trained on it.

“Jack, why is he here?” On the other side of the room, Young Master Clark and Neil were about to watch the competition together with some other rich boys.

Since the day Ken had found out that Neil seemed pretty against Jack, the duo began contacting each other. Ken was especially unsettled about Jack. It was the reason why he had asked Neil out tonight to talk about how they could end Jack or make Jack divorce Selena. They did not expect Jack to be here as well.

“Selena is here too!” Neil’s expression darkened. The couple seemed like they were on good terms.

“Aren’t the only people who get to come here those who booked the luxurious private room?”

Ken thought about it and took a look at the people next to Jack. “Looks like Britney Lee bought them dinner. That’s weird, how did Britney meet Selena and Jack? How could she be willing to spend over a million dollars to buy them dinner?”

“Who knows, seeing them together annoys me!” Neil said angrily.

Neil thought that his father was too cowardly. He made him kneel before Jack the other day to apologize to him. The more he thought about it, the more embarrassed he was; it felt like a mental health problem was developing inside him. This bastard was just a veteran, was he really that terrifying?

“Neil and Ken are here too!” Jack looked over and smiled.

“These rich boys know each other so it’s normal. Moreover, they’re on the same wavelength and are usually up to no good!” Selena said with disdain.

After saying that, she looked at the boxing ring and said worriedly, “Be careful, don’t do anything beyond your capabilities. If you can’t defeat him, think of ways to protect yourself!”

“So I’m actually that important to you!” Jack looked at Selena with a smile.

“No you aren’t!” Selena turned shy and rolled her eyes. “I just don’t want Kylie to lose her dad!”

“Fine, it’s 11 o’clock. I believe everyone’s been waiting for long!”

“Tonight’s match will be incredibly entertaining as the man who came for the challenge is an officer who has just returned from the army. In fact, he’s a marshal!”

“His name is Dennis Howard!”

Chapter 242

“Dennis, why is he here? Ken inhaled sharply upon hearing the name. He did not expect that this good friend of his had signed up for the match tonight.

“F*ck, you know Dennis?” Neil was stunned before adding, “He’s a marshal, the type with explosive combat capabilities!”

“Of course I know him, we’re friends!”

“If that’s the case, this American is dying tonight!” Ken became a little excited. “the match tonight looks entertaining already!”

“I don’t care if it’s entertaining, we’re here for the show!” Neil laughed before whispering to Ken, “Since you said that this marshal Dennis is your friend, why don’t you get him to kill Jack silently one day? As long as he dies, we’ll have our chances, won’t we?”

Ken’s expression darkened upon hearing that. “Did you think I’ve never thought about it before this? I did ask him for help to mess he up but somehow, Dennis ended up telling me to not cause trouble for Jack. In fact, he said the entire Clark family might be in trouble!”

“Really?” Neil’s expression darkened as well. He was afraid. “Motherf*cker, could it be that this guy is stronger than a marshal? If that’s the case, does that mean that he’s the legendary King of War?”

“If he really is the King of War, we’re in trouble. However, we haven’t heard anything about a King of War named Jack White in Eastfield, have we? I’ve searched for this online too!”

“If he really is the King of War, he’s only one or two levels under the God of War. Therefore, we can’t offend someone like that!”

Ken forced a smile and looked over at Jack again. “Anyway, I think Jack isn’t a King of War. If he was, would he still be staying in that old house with his wife? He could’ve bought a mansion by now! A King of War would definitely get awarded a handsome sum of money after leaving the army!”

“That makes sense!” Neil nodded. “But why does Dennis fear him a little? Could there be any other reason for that?”

“Another reason?” Ken scrunched his brows together as he began thinking about it.

After some time, his eyes lit up as he said, “I got it. There are only two possibilities to why Dennis would speak in Jack’s favor; one, he’s no match for Jack, which is pretty impossible. Jack was probably just a normal soldier so how could he beat a marshal? As for the second possibility, Jack might have given Dennis some benefits or promised him something!”

“Benefits? What benefits could Jack promise Dennis? He’s clean!” Neil forced a smile; he did not think it was possible.

“Young Master Hugo, don’t forget that Jack’s wife is beautiful. What if Jack promised Dennis that Selena would spend a night with him? If Dennis heard such a proposal, do you think he’d say no?”

“Although Dennis is into my sister, I don’t think any man could control himself before a woman like Selena if she was being seductive and dominant!” Ken said coldly.

“You’re right, no man would be able to reject a beauty like that!” Neil nodded and added, “Looks like

Selena is just putting up a show as well. She might actually do something like that to impress a marshal!”

“young man, I’ve signed you up but it looks like you might not get the chance to participate tonight. After all, I didn’t expect that the challenger tonight would be the marshal Dennis Howard!” The manager said to Jack.

“This man is my idol. This time, quite a few professionals have returned to Eastfield and there are a few marshals among them. Although they’ve been quiet before this, one of them has finally shown up for this! I don’t care, the match tonight will be entertaining. I want to stay here and watch for some time!”

“Thankfully, the private room I’m assigned to is now empty. Since the customers have left, I can watch too!”

Chapter 243

The female manager thought of something. She turned around and said to the men in black, “Watch him for me. Don’t let him escape, you hear me? It looks like he’s not going in the ring at all tonight. Hmph, if he still can’t pay up by one o’clock, death awaits him!”

“Alright, let’s welcome our challenger, Dennis Howard!” The host said loudly in the ring.

At this moment, a man with prominent features walked out of a door. His expression was incredibly calm. He looked at the crowd nonchalantly before standing aside to wait for his opponent.

“This is great, Daxia’s most powerful is finally in the ring. F*ck, this time, he’ll definitely beat that damn American to death!”

“That’s right, it’s the marshal this time. That guy will definitely die!”

“That might not be the case, the American is tall and huge and he has terrifying strength as well. He

looks like a monster just by standing there. The ten people before this, including a few hidden professionals, all died in the American's hands anyway!"

A few of the rich boys began discussing the match.

Jack scrunched his brows together. He could not believe that the owner of this place had actually set up a boxing ring like this. It seemed like the main goal was to attract rich boys to watch the game. Judging from the way they were talking, some of them had probably never missed a single match within the last ten matches.

However, although it was said that watching the matches was free, one would be required to book the luxurious private room to get that benefit. In other words, one would need to spend a million dollars to watch a match. Since there had been ten matches, that would mean a total expenditure of ten million dollars. The more rich people knew about the matches, the more money the owner would earn here. This owner was pretty good at doing business to make profits.

"Please welcome our arena champion, O'Neal!" The host loudly continued the introduction, "Our O'Neal has had ten consecutive wins since becoming the defending champion. Will he do the same today, or will his streak be ended by our challenger Dennis Howard? Let's see!"

True enough, after the host's introduction, people began cheering and applauding.

"is this another man seeking death?" O'Neal laughed out loud. His voice was incredibly coarse and his body was indeed tall and large. Dennis seemed small before him.

O'Neal was topless and his thick arms were filled with huge muscles, making it seem as if there was a terrifying Kraken clinging onto his body. His entire body emitted a horrifying and powerful aura; it was obvious that he was not one to mess with.

Seeing how his opponent looked like, Dennis' gaze turned a little serious.

“I heard that you’ve killed ten men in a row. You’re doing that on purpose, aren’t you?” Dennis said coldly to his opponent.

“Young man, so what if I did it on purpose? You’ve all signed the consent form and there are so many witnesses. Since you’re here, you should be ready to die!”

“not bad, not bad at all. If I could kill you, a marshal today, that’d be great. You’ve killed quite a few Americans on the battlefield, haven’t you? I’ll take revenge for them today!” O’Neal laughed out loud. He did not take Dennis seriously at all.

“I don’t remember how many people I’ve killed. I’ve never bothered counting!” Dennis clenched his fist, his joints making noises from the friction. He bowed a little, stepped on the ground, and charged toward his opponent. “But I do know that I’m killing one more today!”

Chapter 244

“Great speed!” Britney and the crowd exclaimed.

Everyone was attracted to what had just happened in the ring. Dennis was quick; he dashed out in the blink of an eye like a leopard. Before anyone realized it, he was already in front of O’Neal.

“Bam!”

Dennis’ fist landed on his opponent’s chest. The punch was firm and strong.

“What, he’s hit!”

“Oh My God, that has never happened!”

“Great hit. This guy O’Neal was looking down on Daxia. Hit him hard!”

The crowd erupted!

After his punch, Dennis was pushed back by the reaction force. He took a few steps back and stared at his opponent with a serious expression. He did not dare to ease up.

O’Neal only took a step back and an evil grin appeared on his face. “not bad. You are a marshal of Daxia after all so you have better strength than the other useless idiots!”

“Everyone who challenged you was a hero!” Dennis glared at his opponent in anger. Although they had all lost, they were worth every bit of respect in his heart.

“heroes? Only winners are considered heroes, losers are all trash and cowards! To me, none of you are capable of fighting. You’re all weak to me!” O’Neal laughed out loud. It was impossible to describe how arrogant he looked.

“Really? Unfortunately, Daxia won the battle this time so we’re the heroes!” Dennis sneered on purpose. He wanted to piss his opponent off.

True enough, O’Neal heard that and clenched his fists so hard that there were noises from it. “You won? Hmph, if you didn’t kill our War Commander, we might’ve had a chance!”

“You did lose the war eventually, didn’t you? Are you too cowardly to accept the truth?” Dennis began moving after saying that.

This time, his speed was faster than before. He was in front of O’Neal before anyone realized, and he threw a few punches consecutively onto his opponent’s body.

Dennis' punches were strong as every punch came with a loud bang and his opponent moved backward from the hits.

"Ah!" O'Neal growled in anger like a monster. He clenched his fist and hit Dennis.

This time, their fists met each other.

Dennis was pushed back. It took some effort for him to gain his balance as he shook his hands vigorously and felt that his palms were a little numb.

"How could this guy's strength be so great? On top of that, he was hit multiple times by my punches but does not look affected at all. If it was an ordinary person, he would be dead by now!"

"Looks like this guy was a soldier who focused on body refining. He's definitely not normal. What a tough guy to handle!"

Dennis was a little afraid. It was rare for him to meet such a professional fighter. This guy's fighting capability might be as good as a marshal or even better than some.

"This is great, Dennis hasn't even been hit. There was only a fist bump. O'Neal has already suffered a few punches. Dennis will definitely win!"

The plump female manager next to Jack jumped excitedly, extra passionate about it.

Chapter 245

"Looks like you really want Dennis to win?" Jack forced a smile while looking at the manager.

"No sh*t, he's from Daxia. That damn O'Neal has killed so many of us, of course I want him to die sooner.

Our boss went overboard with hiring this defending champion and awarding him two million dollars for every match he wins.” The female manager said angrily.

Jack sighed. “Hey, I hope Dennis wins too. If that’s the case, I won’t have to do it myself!”

At this moment, Jack paused before continuing, “But I can tell that Dennis is probably no match for O’Neal!”

“What are you talking about? Dennis is everyone’s idol!”

“That’s right, he’s a marshal. How could you say that he’s no match for O’Neal!”

“Young man, I’ll beat you up!”

A few spectators around Jack began scolding him.

The female manager glared at Jack angrily as well. If looks could kill, Jack would be in pieces by now.

“Jack, why don’t you give up? If Dennis is no match for him, wouldn’t that make you defenseless?”

Selena was worried after hearing that. As the saying went, laymen watched the show while experts noticed the details.

Although Dennis seemed like he had the upper hand, Selena believed that since Jack was a soldier on the battlefield for five years, he must have known something the ordinary people did not. That was why Jack’s words made her feel uneasy.

“What are you talking about? How could Dennis lose?”

Before Jack could respond, Matt added, “Even idiots could tell that Dennis is definitely winning. He’s a marshal and has hit his opponent multiple times. His opponent did not even get to strike once. I think you’re just saying bullsh*t so shut up!”

Matt paused before saying to Selena, “I think your husband won’t even get a chance to die in the ring, Just wait till you get beaten to death for not being able to pay!”

“That’s right, that’s right...” Britney added, “If your man gets in the ring and dies there, he might have a little dignity left for dying from one punch. It might be considered dying for your country. If he dies from being beaten up by the bar’s men for not being able to pay the bill, tsk tsk, he will have no dignity left.”

Rachel could not help but laugh. “That’s right, When someone asks you, Selena, how did your husband die? How were you widowed? How are you going to answer that? Are you going to tell them, sighs, my husband was pretending to be rich at a bar and could not afford the bill so he was beaten to death for it?” Rachel’s voice was so illuminating that people around them started laughing as well.

“Why don’t you act in a musical?” Jack replied coldly. His voice terrified Rachel so much that she immediately shut up. She forgot that this young man was so cruel that he dared to hit Britney and could do the same to her as well.

Moreover, Jack was going to die soon and might do something extreme before his death. If he wanted to scapegoat someone, would she not die a wrongful death?

“It’s my turn!” At this moment, O’Neal began charging toward Dennis in the ring at the speed of lightning.

“No way, this guy’s that fast too with his physical stature?”

“I haven’t seen him taking the initiative to attack before this. In the past matches, he did not even move much before beating his opponents to death!” A few ‘veteran’ spectators exclaimed.

Every punch shook Dennis and he moved back!

“No way, is he really losing?”

The female manager looked at Jack before looking back at the ring. Her expression was darker than ever. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 246-250

Chapter 246

The fight in the arena was too intense. Both parties were going at it at full force.

At that moment, they were sweating profusely. Dennis’ shirt was drenched in sweat.

“Ah!” Dennis suddenly bellowed and flexed, causing his shirt to shoot away in pieces.

There were several horrifying scars on his back and chest.

“That’s from a bullet!”

“It seems that Dennis was shot on the battlefield in the past!”

“It’s not just one shot. These are the soldiers that risked their lives for us on the frontlines!”

The crowd felt touched upon witnessing the scars left on Dennis’ chest and abdominal region.

Some women even teared up and almost cried!

Jack frowned and looked around. That female manager was already in tears, sniveling. "To think my idol has this many scars on him. He's a hero. This is a real hero!"

"Manager, didn't you say the man who saved that boy by jumping into the tiger-viewing zone and holding the two Siberian tigers down by their heads was your idol?" asked the female supervisor beside her as a reminder.

"He's also my idol. I have two idols now! No, it should be three. There was another idol before. He did a public service by killing over 200 people from the Dragon God clan in one night. That kind of person is also my idol!" The female manager explained through her tears.

Jack felt awkward. He did not expect the incident at the zoo that morning to spread so quickly.

'Could it be that someone took a picture? At that moment, everyone was panicking. I don't recall anyone taking pictures.' Jack thought to himself.

He then looked to the female manager and asked, "How did you know about the incident at the zoo?"

"Of course I'd know. My friend went to the zoo this morning. He witnessed it with his own eyes!"

The female manager quickly added, "I heard that the man was very handsome and strong!"

Jack felt shy. To be praised for his looks right in the face felt...quite good!

"really? Please stop those praises. If you keep this up, I'll feel embarrassed!" Jack laughed. It seemed that two out of three of her idols were him.

The female manager immediately rolled her eyes at Jack. "Why are you feeling embarrassed? I'm not talking about you. Just look at yourself. You can't even afford a drink. You don't even have a tenth of his stunning looks!"

Jack was dumbfounded. He then continued to look at the arena.

At that moment, the fight in the arena was as intense as ever. Dennis had obviously landed quite a few hits on the opponent's body.

However, the opponent's body was tough. Although he spat out a mouthful of blood, his injuries seemed superficial.

Meanwhile, due to his smaller stature, Dennis was more agile, allowing him to avoid more hits.

However, due to the opponent's larger fist, it was difficult for Dennis to endure each hit.

O'Neal was not looking too good either. He stood there, bent over, and taking deep breaths.

"Oh no, is Dennis not a match for him? He's been spitting up quite a bit of blood though!" Looking at the stage, Ken was worried. After some thought, he shouted, "Dennis, you need to give it all you've got. You've spent three years on the battlefield. You managed to survive that intense battle and can't just die here."

"I-I-I can't hold out any longer." Dennis feebly made the statement as his legs trembled. It was then that he went down on his knees, unable to hold it together any longer.

Jack let out a sigh. Dennis' injuries were too serious. One of his legs was fractured and he even had three cracked ribs.

Chapter 247

However, even in such a situation, Dennis maintained his glare on O'Neal, the American enemy.

Dennis stood up once more, gritting his teeth. One of his legs was broken, trembling greatly.

“you’re done for. Your bones should be broken in several places. What now? Still refusing to admit defeat?” O’Neal laughed while looking at Dennis. “You’re quite amazing to be able to stand with such severe injuries. The 10 people before you weren’t at such a level. They had long admitted defeat while lying on the ground!”

Having said that, O’Neal paused for a moment before continuing, “Unfortunately, their admission of defeat and begging for mercy fell on deaf ears for I have sworn that as long as I stand, I will kill all who come with dissent!”

“Son of a b*tch!”

“Animal!”

Quite a number of people were outraged.

“What’s wrong? You bystanders find this unacceptable? Come sign the consent form and fight me in the arena! I’ll grant your wish!” O’Neal arrogantly opened his arms with his head held high, filled with confidence.

“I-I-I’ll kill you...” Dennis gritted his teeth as he endured the gut-wrenching pain from his leg and rushed at O’Neal in strides.

His leg was already swollen like crazy.

“Dennis!”

The female manager’s tears flowed like a stream. He was truly someone with a soldier’s spirit!

“Since you’re looking for death, I’ll grant your wish!”

Seeing his opponent approaching, O'Neal leaped into the air and sent a kick right at Dennis' chest.

Even if Dennis' body was tough, he could not hold it any longer. He was sent flying backward as he spat out a mouthful of blood. He then lay on the floor, unable to move.

The corners of his mouth were covered with blood. His fists were clenched tightly, unwilling to accept the outcome, but there was nothing else that he could do.

"Winnie, I'm sorry that I can't accompany you any longer. For the country, I must fight!" Dennis muttered softly. It seemed that he was unable to let go of his love, Winnie Clark.

"Let me send you on your final journey! O'Neal cracked his neck and started walking toward Dennis.

"Stop it. He's already in that condition. Can't you just spare his life?"

"O'Neal, you should consider your actions. He's our marshal. Aren't you afraid of the higher ups coming after you if you kill him?"

"That's right, he's not an average Joe. He's our marshal!"

Quite a few rich kids felt moved. Dennis' spirit, his determination to kill the enemy, and his resolve to put everything on the line shook them to the core.

"Hahaha, what about it? He's the one who signed the consent form. Since he's here, he should be prepared to die!" O'Neal laughed out loud.

"Is that so? Then you should be prepared to die too!" Right then, a clear voice caused the entire scene to quiet down.

“Who’s that?”

“It’s that kid!”

Very soon, someone realized who was talking.

“It’s that guy, Jack!” Ken and Neil exchanged glances with a confused look in their eyes. ‘Is that guy for real?’

“Honey, I’m going in!” Jack looked at Selena beside him before walking straight to the arena.

“W-w-wonderful!” Dennis struggled to turn around and look at Jack. His eyes were filled with tears of joy. He had never expected the strongest person in Daxia, the one and only Supreme Warrior, to appear!

Chapter 248

“I didn’t expect someone to volunteer himself for death just like that!” O’Neal laughed loudly, then stated, “Kid, let me end this sh*t of a marshal before I get to you. Don’t rush. If you want to die, you need to queue up!”

“He can’t die in the hands of trash like you!”

Jack kicked off with the tip of his toes and managed to easily jump onto the arena which was taller than a person. After that, he stood there with hands behind his back. Dennis, who was lying on the floor earlier, was blocked off by Jack.

“This guy is quite capable. He was able to jump all the way up there!” A look of astonishment appeared in the female manager’s gaze.

“Too bad he’s still going to die. That O’Neal is just too powerful. Even Dennis, a marshal, was no match for him!” stated the supervisor.

“Selena Taylor, you’re really letting your husband take part in the match? Even the marshal is at death’s door. Isn’t he just going to die horribly?”

“Sigh, I didn’t think your husband would risk his life for a free meal and three million dollars reward! It’s unfortunate that if he dies, you’ll still have to foot the bill!” said Matt, gleeful over their predicament.

“Even if he died, he’s still better than a boy toy like you! You don’t even have the courage to get into the arena, do you?” Selena’s gaze was cold. She was annoyed at how she used to have a crush on this moron. Compared to Jack, he was less than a speck of dust.

Not only was Matt a useless boy toy, he would even gloat over someone’s tragedy.

“How did he get up there?” Ken rubbed his eyes, watching with his mouth agape.

“F*ck me, I thought he was only acting tough earlier. I didn’t expect him to really go up there!” Neil was similarly dumbfounded. He even thought he was dreaming.

Both of them had been looking forward to Jack’s passing and the reason they gathered here was to discuss how to have Jack killed, or to have Selena leave him on her own accord. Never did they think that after an entire day’s discussion, they would be without a solution. In the end, it was Jack himself that had decided to send himself to his own death in the arena!

“That’s wonderful. He’s in the arena, he’s really there. Bloody h*ll, if O’Neal gives him a punch, his head will split apart!” Neil almost jumped in his excited state. “Seeking for him high and low, delivered free to our hold!”

“A wonderful poem! It rhymes well!” Ken burst into laughter. He almost wanted to run around shirtless due to his excitement.

“Who is this guy?”

“Who knows?!”

A number of people started their own discussions. Jack was a fresh face they had not seen before.

“Even the marshal has fallen, yet he dares to challenge him?”

“Wasn’t it only going to be one match tonight? I thought it was one match every night. Is it possible that there are two matches tonight?”

More and more people felt confused.

Chapter 249

“It seems that you’re quite capable!” O’Neal was surprised. He then grinned, showing his pearly white teeth. “Interesting. Your marshal is almost dead, yet you dare come? It seems that you’re one of those righteous patriots that the legends speak of, eh? You must’ve had your head filled with patriotism to the point of stupidity and plan to die for the country?”

“you can come to your own conclusions!” Jack chuckled before calmly saying, “You’ve only managed 10, no, 11 consecutive wins because you never met me. Today, I’ll end your streak and your life!”

“Tsk tsk tsk, who doesn’t know how to boast?! Don’t pee your pants later when you see my fist! Hahaha!” O’Neal continued laughing.

Having said that, he looked to the emcee. “Emcee, what’s going on? Didn’t you only arrange for one match tonight? Why are there two now?”

The emcee smiled with a wince before running over. "I've just clarified with them. This gentleman did register and sign the consent form. The identity written was 'nameless soldier with five years of service killing... Killing American dogs!'"

"Son of a b*tch!" Hearing that, O'Neal clenched his fist, making popping sounds from his joints. "You're just a nameless soldier and you want to kill me? You're mocking me. I'll kill you today itself. Just give me three seconds to end this fight!"

"Wait, I haven't finished reading his reason to fight!" Unexpectedly, the emcee waved for them to stop at that moment. He then continued the announcement. "The second reason is to win the match for the free meal and also obtain the three million dollars reward!"

"Damn, so he's doing it for the money!" Some from the crowd were speechless. They speculated that the main reason this nameless soldier dared to fight was just to get the free meal.

"Your bill was only around one to two million dollars. Together with the three million dollars reward, how much would that be? Around four to five million dollars at most. Are you throwing your life away for that? Have you gone mad thinking about money?" sneered a fat guy.

"For money?" Ken and Neil exchanged looks, feeling speechless. Why did they not consider that Jack would fight in the arena for that little bit of money?

"Kid, you should get out of here now. Don't be suicidal! What's the point for a nameless soldier like you to be throwing your life away?" said a rich lady as she started laughing.

The atmosphere around them lightened up as some of the audience thought they were doing a skit.

Dennis, who was lying on the floor, felt awkward. Jack, the Supreme Warrior, was going to this extent to stay hidden. That was just too much. To think that he would even call himself a nameless soldier. If he was a nameless soldier, then generals like them would not even be qualified to lift this nameless soldier's boots. However, since Jack was in the arena, he was being given another chance at life.

“Manager Wayne, why are you guys here too? How much did this kid spend that made him take part in the match for a free meal?” the emcee asked curiously as he quickly noticed the chubby female manager.

Manager Wayne smiled bitterly. “This guy ordered the two treasured collections from our store. It was originally over 14 million dollars in expenses, but the general manager said that we can give him a 20 percent discount. They broke our store’s record for the highest expenses in a single receipt!”

Having said that, Manager Wayne felt helpless. “In total, it was around 12 million dollars. Unfortunately, this kid could not afford to pay up and tried to leave without paying. He was held back by our people. After he learned that he could have the meal waived and a 3 million dollars reward by winning the arena match, he came here to register!”

“F*ck me, he drank those two treasured collections? This guy really knows how to enjoy life!” someone chuckled bitterly.

“Enjoying life is one thing, but now, he’s about to lose his life. Trying to act tough and treating someone to a meal despite being poor. Didn’t he realize what kind of place this is? Is this somewhere he can afford to dine and dash?” Some young master of a third-class aristocratic family added in a helpless tone, “This kid must’ve underestimated the arena match. Does he think he can win just because he knows some moves after being in the army for a few years?”

“it turns out he’s just too poor to pay!”

Neil burst out laughing. “Jack, you’re quite amazing. You have no money and you still dare to treat others to a meal. Moreover, you dared to spend that much! Before your death, I need to give you a big thumbs up. This is the first time in my life that I’ve seen someone so brave. It’s also the first time I’ve seen someone lose his life from acting tough.”

Chapter 250

“Hah, what a joke. So that’s the reason you’re trying to challenge me!” O’Neal laughed once more. “Kid, is this your last-ditch effort? Trapped between a rock and a hard place, you chose to challenge me

because you would at least die a glorious death and save some face?”

“That’s right! He must be thinking that he’ll die for sure, why not die fighting for Daxia? Who knows if he might even be idolized by some!” Ken burst out laughing once more. “We’ve finally figured him out! So that’s his real intention!”

This time, some of the audience started to look at him with scorn and joined in.

“Kid, since you’re on the stage and signed the consent form, I’ll send you on your journey!” O’Neal’s had a playful expression on his face. After making his statement with his throaty voice, he moved his lumbering figure toward Jack.

“Wait a moment!”

Right at that moment, the general manager of Lotus Bar and Lounge came running over, gasping for air breathlessly. “I-I-I’ve made it in time!”

“General manager, why are you here?”

“You’re here just on time. This kid is trying to dine and dash. We caught him and he has no means to pay so he’s here to challenge the arena hoping for a free meal!” Manager Wayne quickly explained.

The general manager nodded. “I know. You can’t let the fight happen!”

“Can’t let the fight happen? Why?” O’Neal looked at the general manager, confused. “This kid already signed the consent form and provoked me. Why can’t we fight?”

“What’s the matter? Could it be that this kid’s background is special? Is he the young master of some aristocratic family?”

“Could it be that he’s untouchable because of his background?”

Some of the audience started their wild speculations.

The general manager smiled bitterly, finally declaring, “If this kid had only spent around a million dollars, then it wouldn’t matter if he died from the challenge. However, he spent around 14 million dollars. Even with the discount, it’s still around 12 million dollars. If he died, this bill can’t be settled easily.”

The crowd was speechless. It turns out that this kid had spent such a large amount that the general manager was worried he would die and there would be no one to settle the bill. By then, he would suffer a huge loss if he could not collect the 10 million dollars.

Having said that, the general manager then looked at the rich kids and explained, “Moreover, he’s just an ant. If he really fought, he wouldn’t even last three seconds. Such a match would not be worth watching now, would it?”

“General manager, it’s fine if he dies. His wife is still here. When the time comes, you can just have his wife foot the bill!” Britney immediately exclaimed after hearing that.

The general manager was surprised, then turned around to look at Selena and said, “What can a woman be capable of? You want her to foot the bill? I don’t think she can be trusted!”

“General manager, the rule you set was that the meal will be free if we win the match. What’s this? You can’t afford to lose? Reluctant to part with that 10 million dollars? If that’s the case, your Lotus Bar and Lounge is a bit too stingy!?” Jack gave the general manager a firm stare, refusing to treat him respectfully.

The general manager’s mouth twitched violently before he said, “What nonsense are you spouting? We’re a subsidiary business of a first-class aristocratic family. Why would we be concerned over a mere 10 million dollars? The problem is, can a small fry like you win?”

“Why should you care if I can win? I think you just can’t afford to lose!” Jack shrugged.

The general manager was at a loss for words. Although they did have the backing of a first-class aristocratic family, it was over 10 million, not just one or two million. What if the boss got angry when they failed to collect the money? Although he was the general manager, he was just an employee and had no authority to make such decisions. If not for the fear of his boss coming after them, he would not have rushed there urgently.

“F*ck, could it be?” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 251-255

Chapter 251

Ken was speechless. If that was the case, would that mean that Jack would not die?

“Such a good chance, how can I...” Neil was also troubled.

However, his eyes quickly lit up and looked at Ken as he suggested, “Why don’t we each come up with six million dollars? If he dies, we’ll foot the bill for him. That way, the general manager will surely let the match go on!”

Ken was surprised and cheered up instantly. “Of course! Six million dollars each is not too much. If we can have Jack killed, then we’ll profit greatly from this. Bloody h*ll, it turns out that this kid’s life is worth quite a lot of money after all!”

Having said that, Ken quickly raised his hand and announced loudly to the general manager, “General manager, I’ve thought about it. I know both Jack and his wife. We’re considered acquaintances. If they win the challenge, you should waive his bill!”

Jack was caught off-guard. He did not expect Ken to speak on his behalf.

The next second, Ken voiced out again. "If he dies, I'll foot the bill for him. He's already signed the consent form so you should let him try!"

Jack was speechless. So Ken was just afraid of him not being able to take part in the arena match.

"Are you serious?" Hearing that, the general manager was delighted as Jack would be dead for sure and only needed someone to foot the bill for him. He did not want Jack taking part in the match because he was afraid that nobody would foot the bill after he died. Even if this guy could not pay up, he could at least capture him and present him to his boss. That would still be better than a dead guy.

He had not expected Young Master Clark from a second-class aristocratic family to make such a request. It provided him with a way out.

"Could it be that Young Master Clark is willing to foot the bill after he dies? What a nice guy! Meanwhile, Britney and Matt's expression turned ugly. They were wishing for Jack to be killed and leaving Selena unable to pay the bill, having her stay back.

Now their plans were foiled. If Jack died, someone was going to help Selena get out of this.

Very soon, Matt seemed to come to a realization and smiled. "Hey, Selena looks quite good. These young masters are probably trying to win her over."

"It's fine. With her man dead, that should be sufficient to teach her a lesson!" Britney sneered.

"Relax, I will definitely honor my promise. Moreover, there are so many people here to bear witness!" Ken gave the general manager a smile then quietly muttered to Neil next to him,

"Young Master Hugo, I'll pay the money first. Later, you'll have to settle the other half with me."

“Worry not. If Jack’s dead, we’ll both gain the opportunity. It’s just 6 million dollars, I won’t cheat your money!” Neil answered happily.

“Alright then. Emcee, continue the match! The general manager waved at the emcee and stated, “Since he’s willing to risk his life just to get a free meal, we’ll not get in his way!”

“Alright, continue the match. The arena champion is still O’Neal with 11 consecutive wins!”

“Meanwhile, our challenger is Jack, a nameless soldier!”

“Everyone please take a bet and see if our Jack can last a full 10 seconds or just three?” the emcee announced cheerfully, confident that Jack would surely die. After that, he moved to the side.

“kid. I’m coming!” O’Neal burst out in laughter as he strode toward Jack. “Let me blow you away with one punch!”

Chapter 252

O’Neal had a playful look on his face. Looking at Jack’s physique, he seemed even smaller than Dennis. With that, he could not even take Jack seriously.

However, while O’Neal was around one meter away from Jack, he suddenly burst into action.

He jumped up in a flash and raised his right leg, sending a forceful kick at O’Neal’s neck. What went unseen was the short flash of light that came and went in an instant.

It seemed that Jack’s attack caught him completely off guard. O’Neal was not quick enough to respond. He was already hit by the kick just as his hands stretched forward.

At the same time, Jack gently landed back where he stood, hands behind his back. He seemed so carefree and relaxed.

“You...” O’Neal felt it. His cervical vertebrae were broken in an instant by the kick.

However, that was not the scariest thing. It was that unseen current that bore deep into his body from his neck. That flow of energy was extremely volatile. By all logic, it should have exploded long ago. However, it was seemingly restricted by something, only exploding when it reached specific locations.

O’Neal’s abdomen, chest, and a dozen other areas burst open, splattering blood everywhere. He spat out a mouthful of blood before falling straight onto the arena’s floor.

“What!? Those that were waiting to see Jack get slaughtered were all stunned. In less than a second after Jack’s attack, O’Neal was killed?”

“Oh my god!” At first, Selena was worried about Jack but seeing the scene before her, she was shocked, her mouth opened slightly. She placed a hand over her mouth as she looked at him in disbelief.

The area turned silent in an instant before quickly going into an uproar again!

“Oh my god. Did my eyes play tricks on me? O’Neal was killed in an instant?”

“That’s right. How did O’Neal die before he could even make a move?”

“Impossible. Even Marshal Dennis was no match for O’Neal, yet this kid killed him with a single kick?” A number of people started exclaiming loudly.

“Wonderful! O’Neal’s a son of a b*tch that’s killed so many of our people. He deserves to die. This Jack guy is quite amazing!”

“Yeah, I didn’t expect him to have such terrifying strength. He actually managed to kill O’Neal in such a short time!”

Some of the audience cheered passionately instead.

“Yay, he won!”

Hugh and Rosa felt relieved. They did not wish for Selena to be widowed once more after her husband had finally returned from the battlefield.

“Selena’s husband is so amazing! My god, his strength is even greater than a marshal?” Dylan was just as excited. “Motherf*cker, that god damned American is finally dead.”

“I-I-Impossible!” Neil and Ken were dumbfounded. They were looking forward to seeing Jack’s death and Selena crying in tears. That would then allow them to take the chance to console her.

Selena might have even been touched by their actions, giving them hope. They did not expect this turn of events!

“H-h-he won?”

The general manager took a few steps back, unable to accept the outcome. Young Master Clark promised to foot the bill if Jack lost...

Chapter 253

Nevertheless, now that Jack won the match, Young Master Clark did not need to help settle the bill anymore. In fact, according to the rules set before, they needed to waive Jack’s bill and even pay him a three million dollars reward.

“General manager, for this matter... We didn’t expect him to win. It seems we’ve just saved some money!” Ken said with a smile despite feeling frustrated deep down.

Jack smiled nonchalantly and waved at Ken. “Thank you Young Master Clark for watching my back so I could fight without worry!”

“You’re welcome! We’re all acquainted and I’m even friends with Selena!” Ken laughed along, appearing as though he was on good terms with Jack.

Selena had a cold expression on her face as she remained silent. In the past, Ken carried himself like a gentleman. She had even treated him as a real friend. However, ever since this person came to her house and tried to forcefully have it demolished, she had finally seen through this two-faced persona.

Moreover, his willingness to foot the bill for Jack was with ulterior motives. Firstly, it was to have the general manager continue the match so that Jack would die. Secondly, it was to score brownie points with her. The bill totaled over 10 million dollars after all. If he paid the bill, other women might have really been touched and thrown themselves at him.

Unfortunately, Selena was not only beautiful, but she was also blessed with intelligence as well. She had long seen through the other party’s deceit.

“So strong! You’re so strong! Jack, you’re my hero!” The chubby Manager Wayne was teary-eyed. “You’re so awesome for saving my idol Dennis. Now you’re one of my idols too!”

Hearing that, Jack was at a loss on how to respond. Just how did he become her idol again?

“Brother Dennis!” A few men that looked like Dennis’ friends came looking for him and quickly ran up the arena’s stage. “Brother Dennis, are you okay? Your injuries are too severe. What should we do?”

“Call the ambulance! He should be able to survive this!” A woman interjected.

“No need for that. I have some medicine here. Just let him take that and bring him home to recuperate!” Jack walked over and crouched over Dennis, placing a black medicinal pill in his palm.

Dennis held the pill tightly and looked at Jack with his bloodshot eyes. “I-I-I...I’ve embarrassed our Daxia military!”

“Save your words. Just go back and treat your wounds! You didn’t embarrass our Daxia military, but instead honored us. Your soldier spirit is unbroken. Us soldiers should always fight to the last moment! We have to charge forward, even to our deaths!” Jack gave Dennis a smile before finally standing up. He took out a White-Sand cigarette and lit it.

“Brother Dennis, should we call the ambulance? Is this medicine reliable?” asked a man, frowning.

“It will work. Just bring me home!”

Dennis placed the pill in his mouth and swallowed it.

He knew in his heart that Jack, the Supreme Warrior, was not only good at taking lives, but was also equally good at saving them! On the battlefield, quite a number of soldiers were diagnosed to be beyond saving, yet they were all brought back to life by Jack. That was why the Supreme Warrior had another lesser-known title—Supreme Healer! A man like that was worthy of being worshipped by all of Daxia’s military.

Dennis was then carried away. At that moment, Selenia’s eyes were red and she could no longer hold herself back.

She rushed up the stage and ran into Jack’s arms, pursing her sexy lips. “You oaf. How dare you give me a scare like that? Here I was thinking you might not be his match, yet you turned out to be so strong!”

“honey, I’ve already told you. It’s easy to kill this trash!” Jack chuckled, then looked toward the general manager and said, “General manager, you’ll honor your words, right? You have to waive our bill. Moreover, that three million dollars reward, I want it in cash!”

Chapter 254

The general manager’s face turned pitch black in a moment. It was not a simple 10 or 20 thousand dollars, but 12 million dollars! Furthermore, if not for the earlier discount, it would be over 14 million dollars. If he waived that bill and still paid out three million dollars, it would not just be some loss, but rather a huge hit for his business. When the time came, even his boss would reprimand and advise him against letting Jack take part in the match.

However, after some thought, he quickly broke into a smile. “what about this, little brother? We can come to a compromise. Your expenses are just too much. Those that spent their money here, including customers that booked a private luxury hall for themselves, would only have to pay around one to two million dollars. Don’t you think it’s a little over the top to have us waive such a huge bill for you as a new customer?”

Having said that, he paused for a moment before continuing, “What about this, I’ll give you a 50 percent discount. Your previous bill is over 14 million dollars. I’ll round it down for you to 14 million dollars. Adding on the 50 percent discount, you’ll only need to pay seven million dollars!”

After that, he reconsidered and added, “Of course, we’ll be giving you the reward. Deducting three million dollars from your prize money, you only need to pay us four million dollars!”

“What? After spending about 14 million dollars, he only needs to pay four million dollars? Isn’t that just too much of a benefit for that couple?” Across the room, Matt frowned.

“I don’t care. As long as his bill is not fully waived, that would be good enough!”

“I don’t care if it’s 14 million dollars or four million dollars. Jack won’t be able to pay up. As long as he can’t pay up, then the outcome is the same!” Britney cackled, patiently waiting for Jack and Selena to be beaten to death by the boss.

“What a joke!” Jack burst out laughing upon hearing the suggestion. “It’s only over 10 million dollars. It’s not like I can’t afford to pay it. However, since you’ve placed such a rule, you should honor it. What you promised was to waive the bill if I won the match, but you didn’t state how much you’d waive! Moreover, that three million is a prize reward that you must pay me! It’s a matter of principles!”

The general manager’s expression darkened immediately. “Kid, don’t make things difficult after I provided you a way out. This is our territory and our arena champion was someone we spent a lot of money to hire, yet here you go and have him killed. It’s already very generous of us not to pursue this matter with you!”

“What’s this? The great Lotus Bar and Lounge is trying to go back on a promise?” Jack was unfazed, staring straight at the other party.

However, Selena was a little scared. After all, the bar had a huge backer, a first-class aristocratic family, behind them. Otherwise, the rich kids around them would not have shut up and watched quietly instead of standing up for them.

“General manager, what about this? You waive the bill and I’ll leave the reward. We can come to another compromise! Take it as us using this three million dollars to pay for tonight’s expenses. How about it? Selena asked carefully as she took a step forward, tugging Jack’s sleeve at the same time.

“are you dreaming?” The general manager chuckled, then said, “With the arena champion dead, do you know how much loss that would incur on us? Moreover, the match earlier was not fair. It doesn’t count!”

Chapter 255

“Unfair?” Jack’s eyebrows twitched. “In front of everyone, with so many witnesses, you’re telling me it’s unfair?”

Unexpectedly the general manager retorted, “Of course it’s unfair. Dennis Howard is a marshal. He’d been fighting with O’Neal for so long. Although O’Neal won, he might’ve suffered serious injuries. It could have been that his internal injuries did not act up earlier...”

By that point, the general manager paused for a moment before continuing, "You, on the other hand, were at your peak and challenging an injured man. Do you think that's fair? I don't think you could've killed him if he wasn't hurt!"

Jack was speechless. The person in front of him was rather resourceful, or he would not have been the general manager. His cunning was far beyond the others, seemingly allowing him to spin lies into truth.

Neil slapped his own forehead, enlightened. "That's right, that must be it. This kid must've got a stroke of good luck! Like I said, he's just an ordinary soldier. How could he possibly defeat O'Neal? Even Dennis was no match for O'Neal, much less this guy!" With that, Neil suddenly became the center of attention.

He then placed one hand behind him and raised his head slightly, saying with a smile, "Think about what happened earlier. Jack merely landed a single kick on O'Neal's neck. I don't think O'Neal, with his physique, would die from just a kick, right?"

"Oh yeah, that sounds about right!" Seeing an opportunity to pick on Jack, Ken immediately chimed in.

Neil then added, "Furthermore, O'Neal's body, chest, and stomach were all hit by the great Marshal Dennis prior to the match. Coincidentally, those were the spots that burst open. What does that tell us? It proves that Marshal Dennis' attack was the one that killed O'Neal!"

Hearing that, the general manager gave Neil a big thumbs up. "Young Master Hugo is truly smart. That's right, I already felt that something was off but couldn't put my finger on it. I finally understand now!"

"Yes, of course. That must be it. It felt weird to me too. How could he die from just a mere kick to the neck? Earlier, Marshal Dennis dished out so many ferocious attacks that landed on O'Neal, yet he managed to withstand it all. It proves that O'Neal's endurance is really great!"

"Jack, on the other hand, is scrawny, nowhere near Marshal Dennis. How can his one kick kill O'Neal?"

“That’s why, the one that killed O’Neal should be Marshal Dennis! This Jack dude is just incredibly lucky!” Britney jumped in, feeling ecstatic.

With that, even those that thought Jack was stronger than Dennis started their own discussions.

They felt that Jack was just extremely lucky. Even if he had not gone into the arena, O’Neal might have just burst open soon enough. Therefore, to them, it was Dennis that killed O’Neal while Jack was the lucky one.

Selena’s expression soured as well. She also felt that something was off. Although Jack was strong, it should not have been beyond that of a marshal. He was not a King of War or God of War. How was it possible for him to kill the opponent in just one kick? Whatever it was, she had to stick to the claim that Jack was the one that killed O’Neal. Otherwise, they could not afford to pay that bill of over 10 million dollars!

At that, Selena immediately piped up, “It doesn’t matter if Jack was lucky or not, he was the one that made the kill. It happened during the second match so we won! The attack was made after the emcee officiated the match! Therefore, this reward is ours and the bill must be waived!”

“Honey, you’re absolutely right!” Jack smiled in a carefree manner and gave Selena a big thumbs up.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 256-260

Chapter 256

Selena rolled her eyes at Jack before speaking to the general manager. “We can forgo the three million dollars, but this bill must be waived!”

“That’s right. Boss, how can you go back on your words?” One of the rich kids spoke up after seeing the charming smile on Selena’s face, unable to resist white-knighting her.

“That’s right. Even if her husband was lucky, he was still the one that killed O’Neal. This is just like kill-stealing in a game. If he’s the one that did the last hit, that kill goes to him. Therefore, the glory should

go to him as well.” Another man joined in as well, “You make quite the profit here everyday. How can you be so stingy?!”

“That’s right. If your bar lacks integrity, how would we dare spend our money here in the future?”

“Moreover, regardless of the fairness of the second match, it was something that you agreed to. Since you’ve agreed to it, that means that the rules apply!” stated a beautiful woman with her arms folded in front of her chest.

The general manager’s expression turned gloomy. With a sum over 10 million dollars, it was not really up to him to make the decision.

“I don’t care. If it wasn’t for this kid getting on stage, my idol Dennis would’ve been killed by O’Neal. Although Jack had only gone up and got the last hit, that hit was crucial!”

After Manager Wayne gave it some thoughts, she walked up to the general manager and whispered, “General manager, I think we should just waive the bill. We need to think about the long game!”

The general manager almost had an aneurysm. This manager was just too dumb. Why would she be helping the outsiders?

He gave it some thoughts, then finally stated, “This bill is over 10 million dollars. It’s not my decision to make. How about this, I’ll give my boss a call and tell him about the situation. We’ll make a decision then!”

With that said, the general manager went off to make the phone call.

After a moment, he came back once again. “The boss said that you can have the reward since you won the match. Going by the rules, the bill will also be waived!”

Hearing that, Selena was delighted. She held onto Jack's hand, exclaiming, "Honey, this is great! We don't have to pay and even gained three million dollars!"

Right at that moment, the general manager continued unexpectedly, "However, our boss has a condition!"

Jack's expression darkened. "What other condition? Your boss should think carefully if he's even qualified to negotiate with me!"

At that moment, Jack was pissed at how the other party was going back on their words.

Moreover, they even hired an American to be the arena champion that led to the death of so many Daxian men. It was already very generous of Jack to not destroy their entire establishment.

"Kid, you're quite the feisty one. Our boss is the younger brother of the Roy family's master! for him to speak to you is already favorable treatment from him. How dare you make such insolent statements?!"

The general manager then sneered, "Kid, you're lucky that our boss is still on his way over. If he was here and heard those words from you, you'd be dead!"

"This guy is too arrogant! He'll eventually learn what regret is!" Britney growled through gritted teeth.

Originally, they should have all been leaving after the arena match. However, out of curiosity, those that watched the arena match did not leave the venue. They were all curious to find out what condition the boss of the Lotus Bar and Lounge would request for. It appeared that their boss did not wish to let Jack waive his meal and give him the three million dollars reward that easily as well.

Chapter 257

"Sigh, I can't believe that Master Roy's brother would be so stingy. It's only 10 million dollars and yet he's unwilling to part with it! He won't go far in life!" Jack let out a long breath, appearing relaxed.

Hearing his statement, more people felt speechless. 'This person is just too relaxed. That's over 10 million dollars, it's not a small figure. A lot of people can't even make that much money in their entire life.'

Even if the Roy family were rich, it would not hurt them to save as much as they could. Moreover, that kid could not pay his own bill and yet, he was looking down on the 10 million dollars. They had no idea what was the source of his confidence.

Jack took a look at the time and frowned. "Time flies. It's already almost 11.30pm. I'll give your boss another 10 minutes. If he doesn't arrive in 10 minutes, I'm going to leave. I still need to go to bed!" Having said that, Jack stretched his back before continuing, "Otherwise I might be late for work tomorrow. Can you bear that responsibility?"

Everyone was dumbfounded. 'This kid is too good at acting tough, he's truly talented. How can he spin his dine and dash into something so inconsequential?'

Most importantly, he even claimed that someone from a first-class aristocratic family might not be able to bear the responsibility of him being late to work.

"how much is your salary? What kind of job is it? Do share with us. I'd like to find out if we can bear this responsibility! I'm a general manager with lowly wages. My monthly income is only 550 thousand dollars! How much do you make a day? I'll pay you, alright?"

The general manager burst into a fit of laughter as though he was watching a comedy.

"550 thousand dollars a month is quite good!"

"Yeah, this general manager's life is quite lavish!"

Some people started talking among themselves. Meanwhile, the general manager's face was filled with bliss, enjoying the moment.

"I'm just a bodyguard!" Jack made a faint smile, then continued, "However, my monthly wage is 20 million dollars. If we break it down, then it should be 666 thousand dollars a day. Since you plan to pay my salary for a day, I'll round it down for you. You can just pay me 600 thousand dollars!"

Standing beside him, Selena was dumbfounded. Jack was just too daring. That was just intentionally antagonizing the other party. If they were really pissed off, then things would get troublesome. As expected, the general manager's expression turned uglier by the second.

He gritted his teeth. "Kid, you're a bodyguard with a monthly pay of 20 million dollars? I think you're insulting our intelligence! Just who do you think you are? If you say that you're a marshal or a King of War, I might believe you. However, you're nothing. You're just a normal bodyguard. Do you think I'll believe you?"

Having said that, he then pointed at the few big guys in black suits and said, "This kid is too arrogant. Go teach him a lesson while the boss is on his way. Take it as an assessment of his strength!"

"I've killed O'Neal, yet you're asking these trash to kill me? What are you, stupid?" Jack looked at the few big guys, feeling helpless. These ordinary bouncers were even less of a match for him.

"Kid, don't look down on us. We're all retired mercenaries. Do you think we're just average Joes?"

"That's right. This kid is too insolent. We'll have to teach him a lesson or he'll remain deluded about his strength!"

The big guys in black suits were long annoyed by Jack. They quickly surrounded him.

"Everyone, please don't fight. We can talk it out!" The sight of so many big guys scared Selena.

“Honey, please move back. Since they’re itching for it, I’ll have a little stretch!” Jack stated with a relaxed smile.

Chapter 258

However, Selena did not back off. Instead, she pulled Jack back and said in a worried tone, “Please stop fighting. Their boss is from a first-class aristocratic family. If we offend them, it’s equivalent to offending a first-class aristocratic family!”

Jack forced a smile, then looked at the people behind him before speaking, “Honey, do you think it’s possible to not fight now? They’re coming at us on their own. Am I supposed to stand here and let them kill me?”

Selena finally realized that it was too late. The general manager gave the order for his lackeys to take Jack out. They could not possibly just become sitting ducks.

She thought about it, then backed off a few steps. “You be careful then. Even if you can defeat them, please don’t kill them. By then, the situation will be unsalvageable!”

Jack nodded. “Relax, they’re just working under orders. Of course I won’t kill them!”

“You two are really funny. Are you trying to perform a skit for us at a time like this?” one of the big guys chuckled.

“It seems that they think this conversation will intimidate us? do you really think you killed O’Neal with your ability? You’re just lucky to have made the last hit when O’Neal is seriously injured!” said another guy.

Yet another guy broke into a grin. “I’m guessing that Marshal Dennis must’ve known some terrifying fist technique. His fist technique’s strength lies in its ability to leave behind lingering energy in the

opponent's body after an attack. It may not seem like much and the opponent would hardly feel the injury. However, once the energy collects and reaches a certain time, it will explode. That's why O'Neal's body finally burst open!"

At that point, he stopped momentarily and then continued, "You, on the other hand, had merely got lucky and kicked O'Neal right as the energy exploded!"

"So that's what it was. As expected of a marshal, what a miraculous fist technique!"

"That's why. Here I was wondering how a nameless soldier like him could instantly take out O'Neal. So that was the reason. He's gotten really lucky!"

"Ah, I get it now!"

The other bystanders were coming to their own realization. The scene where Jack killed O'Neal with a mere kick had shocked them greatly, to the point that they thought Jack was a King of War or even God of War. With further consideration, they finally figured out the reason. Seeing that everyone had come to the same conclusion, Jack felt relieved.

All the while, he wanted to keep a low profile. He only wanted to stay beside his wife and daughter and pass their days in peace without being disturbed. Otherwise, he would have people looking to gain his favor wherever he went with insincere words. Just the thought of a life like that gave him a headache. If not for that, his own disciple Lana Zechs would not need to wear a mask or shades before going out.

Earlier, in order to save Dennis, he was forced to take action. However, Dennis was a marshal. If he defeated O'Neal, that would expose his own strength and bring about suspicions. In order to hide his identity and keep his terrifying strength a secret, Jack resorted to that move, one that made everyone feel that O'Neal's death was most likely due to Dennis.

Of course, he was also lucky that Dennis had fought O'Neal in a dragged out match and landed so many punches on his opponent. His opponent had indeed taken quite some damage, therefore making it a

believable story. As for his kick on O'Neal's neck that led to his chest and abdomen bursting apart, it was done intentionally to make others feel that something was off. It would also divert their attention to Dennis.

"You're right. That must have been what happened!" Unexpectedly, Jack admitted it with a smile.

However, he turned to the big guys and said, "Although I'm no match for Dennis and O'Neal, I'm still capable of dealing with the few of you!"

"we're not as weak as you think!" One guy dashed at them after laughing out loud, sending a punch at Jack.

Jack shifted slightly to the side and avoided the opponent's attack. With a backhanded pull, a great surge of force caused the opponent to lose his balance as he immediately fell face-first to the ground.

"Motherf*cker, you're quite fast!" Two other guys attacked Jack from two different directions.

Chapter 259

Jack sent out two consecutive kicks, sending his opponents flying before they crashed hard onto the floor.

He reversed his hands for two more punches, blowing yet another two guys away.

However, they quickly climbed back onto their feet.

"This guy is weaker than Dennis!" someone exclaimed.

"That's right. If he had Dennis' strength, those five wouldn't be able to stand back up. They might have

even been coughing up blood by now!”

Britney chimed in, “Jack was just lucky earlier. He sure gave me a scare when I thought he had a King of War’s strength. Turns out he was just acting tough!”

“Yeah. With this test, his true strength will be exposed anytime soon!” Matt nodded along. “If not for Marshal Dennis spending so much time fighting O’Neal, Jack would’ve been killed immediately!”

“You guys, join in!” The general manager looked at the other bulky guy and said, “Go at him together. I refuse to believe that we’d lose to this guy!”

Right then, the other few guys that did not join the fray suddenly rushed at Jack simultaneously. Unfortunately, they were still no match for Jack and were sent flying one after another. After some time, they were all lying on the ground and some even coughed up blood.

“Useless! You can’t even defeat him with so many of you!” The general manager was clenching his fists angrily as he bellowed.

Jack looked at his behavior, then waved at him. “Since you said they’re useless, you should come at me!”

Having said that, Jack gave him the middle finger, further taunting him. “Come!”

The general manager almost had an aneurysm. He was just a backseat driver as he knew nothing about fighting. Right at that moment, a man with a huge bouncing belly walked in with a few men in black suits, holding a cigar in his hand.

“Why are you guys fighting?”

The man gave off the aura of a ruler. Although his looks were mediocre, he carried a strong presence.

“Boss, this kid was being disrespectful. He was claiming that you weren’t qualified to negotiate with him! This is just a blatant slander against our Roy family!”

“That’s why I told them to rough him up a bit. However, this kid is unexpectedly strong, hence…” the manager reported respectfully after he took a few steps forward and bowed.

The man with the cigar took a slow, long puff before stating, “As long as he’s strong. I was worried that he wouldn’t be strong enough!”

Having said that, he turned to Jack. “Kid, I can let all our past conflicts slide. This bill of 10 million dollars can be waived too. As for that three million dollars reward, that’s yours as well.”

At that point, he paused for a moment before breaking into a grin. “However, you killed the expert that I spent a fortune on to hire as the arena champion. That makes it difficult for me to run my business in the future.”

“So what? Didn’t your arena match have us sign a consent form? Could it be that only the arena champion is allowed to win while the other challengers are supposed to just lose?” Jack mocked with a cold smile.

“that’s not what I meant. I, Keaton Roy, am not someone that cannot afford to lose. Since you’re quite strong, I hope that we can work together and have you be the next arena champion!”

Chapter 260

“What?! He’s hiring him as the arena champion!” some people exclaimed as they finally understood what was happening.

“It’s dangerous to be the arena champion. Encountering an expert would be as good as death. Even if the opponent were gracious enough not to kill, he would most likely be disabled!” said another

bystander.

“However, the arena champion is a profitable position. The pay is not tallied per month but per match instead. Only when someone registers for the challenge will there be a match!” others chimed in.

“What a lucky guy. He got his bill waived, gained three million dollars, and most importantly, he found a job!” Matt was speechless. At first he hoped for Jack to take the challenge and get killed by O’Neal just so that he could add to Selena’s suffering. He had not expected this to be the outcome!

“I’m sorry but I’m not interested!”

“Moreover, I advise you to stop these activities, otherwise...your bar might be closed down!” Jack reminded him with a shrug.

“brother, you really know how to joke. This is the territory of a first-class aristocratic family. An ordinary person wouldn’t have the authority to close this place down!” Keaton burst out laughing, then narrowed his eyes. “I don’t like to beat around the bush. I’ll ask you one last time. Will you be the arena champion!?”

“The answer is the same. Not interested!” Jack shrugged once more, firm with his decision.

“You’re choosing the less favorable option, eh?” With a scornful smile, Keaton waved his hand. “Rocky, give him a good beating. Moreover, he must pay every single cent for tonight’s bill. Otherwise, don’t let him leave!”

“Yes boss!” Rocky was a one-eyed man. He kneaded his fists before stepping forward.

“Looks like you’re a lot stronger than these guys!” Jack glanced at those big guys in suits lying on the floor. He could tell that Rocky was not a simple person.

From the way he walked, he noticed something was different. Of course, a person like this was inconsequential to Jack.

“Good observation!” Rocky smirked. “In that case, are you scared?”

“Not at all. I’ve never been scared during my five years on the battlefield, much less because of you!” Jack forced a smile.

“You’re rather confident!” Rocky replied as he prepared to act.

Right then, a middle-aged woman with a little boy made her way in through the crowd. She looked at the situation and immediately shouted, “Stop!”

Rocky was surprised and immediately turned around, greeting her loudly, “Mrs. Roy!”

“Honey, what’s wrong?” Keaton frowned immediately with a confused look on his face.

Taking a look, Selena’s heart was overjoyed. She did not expect this woman to be Mrs. Roy. Jack had just saved her son at the zoo in the morning. No wonder she was able to offer 50 million dollars as a reward just like that. It turned out that she was from a first-class aristocratic family.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 261-265

Chapter 261

“Benefactor, why are you here? I’ve really misunderstood your intentions at the zoo this morning. I thought you weren’t a doctor and therefore, didn’t know how to treat my son. Surprisingly, my son’s leg is all better now as he’s able to run and jump!” Mrs. Roy brought her son to Jack, then urged her son, “Go say thank you to this uncle. If not for him, you’d be dead!”

“Thank you uncle, you’re so amazing! I want to be as strong as you are in the future! Thank you for chasing the tigers away or I’d be dead!” Little Jake looked at Jack, his eyes filled with admiration and respect.

“What?!” Keaton took a deep breath, then asked anxiously, “Honey, i-i-is he the benefactor who held down two Siberian tigers with each of his hands that you told me about?” Keaton was very anxious, to the point where his voice was trembling.

“That’s right. I didn’t think he’d be here. What’s happening?” Mrs. Roy asked suspiciously after looking at the people lying about on the floor.

“A misunderstanding, it’s all a misunderstanding!” Keaton then carefully introduced them to his wife before saying apologetically, “I didn’t expect that he would be the benefactor I’d been looking for all this while!”

“It can’t be. He’s actually the man that defeated the Siberian tigers, my idol?!” Manager Wayne’s eyes were twinkling as she almost jumped out of her seat. She had finally met her idol. Now there was only that one idol remaining, the one that killed over 200 men from the Dragon God clan.

“Is this for real? I’ve heard this afternoon that someone saved a kid that fell into the tiger viewing zone at the zoo. The situation was terrifying. I didn’t expect that kid to be the son of this establishment’s boss!”

“Moreover, the person that saved his son was actually Jack!”

Britney was quite badly shaken. To hold a tiger down with one hand, even if his strength was lesser than Dennis, was not something an ordinary person was capable of. It would seem that Jack, who was a soldier on the battlefield for five years, had some ability that was sufficient enough to be considered an expert.

“Y-y-you almost had Rocky kill our benefactor! If not for him, our son would’ve been devoured by the

tigers!” Mrs. Roy was furious, pulling at Keaton’s ears.

“Ouch, it hurts. Honey, please, lighten your grip. We’re outside now. Didn’t you promise to not embarrass me in public? There are so many people watching now!” Keaton’s face turned red from the pain, dropping his cigar on the floor as he begged for mercy.

Upon witnessing the scene, everyone was dumbfounded. They did not expect him to be henpecked.

Jack and Selena exchanged looks, then showed an odd expression on their faces. Selena felt the burden in her heart lighten. It seemed that she would not have to worry about being held here tonight.

“What are you waiting for? Go apologize to our benefactor. Here you are trying to have him be your arena champion. How can you be this dumb?” Mrs. Roy let go of Keaton’s ears then placed her hands on her hips, assuming an intimidating pose.

It was apparent that this woman was not someone a normal person could match when she threw a tantrum.

Keaton finally walked awkwardly toward Jack and bowed respectfully. “I’m sorry. All that was a misunderstanding. I really didn’t know that you were the benefactor I’d been looking for to express my gratitude! If not for you taking action, my son would’ve been a goner. He’s my only child!”

Having said that, he raised his head and looked directly at Jack. “Your bill for today will be waived. That three million dollars reward is too little. To show my gratitude, I’ll pay you 100 million dollars!”

“What! 100 million dollars!?” Rosa, Hugh, and the others all gasped. 100 million dollars. That was 100 million dollars! Jack had just hit the jackpot. Moreover, Jack and Selena could finally live a comfortable life.

“So much money!” Matt’s expression darkened as he was dumbstruck. That was a gift from the heavens.

If he had 100 million dollars, he would not have to lower himself to be a boy toy and marry a woman like Britney.

“your wife offered me 50 million dollars this morning and I rejected it. I didn’t expect that by nightfall, the price would actually go up!” Jack made a pained smile, then stated, “I’m sorry, I don’t want the money! I only want the three million dollars cash reward!”

Chapter 262

“Oh my god, it’s 100 million dollars! That’s 100 million dollars! He’s actually rejecting it for the three million dollars? Is he stupid?” Britney shouted. She was shocked to her core.

“Yeah. Damn it, with 100 million dollars, you’re set for life. Why did he reject it? If it were me, I’d definitely agree to it without hesitation!” Matt also exclaimed in astonishment, wondering if he was in a dream.

“Who said that being a soldier is useless? This guy is strong and good at fighting. He can hold two Siberian tigers with his bare hands. Now that his lucky moment came and he managed to save the son of Master Roy’s brother, he’s being granted a great fortune in one go!”

“However, why is he refusing to take it?” Dylan also looked confused. “Aren’t they poor? They’re so poor that they can’t even afford to pay the 10 million dollars bill, yet now he’s refusing 100 million dollars? Nevertheless, if you say they don’t like money, then why take the three million dollars?”

Hearing Dylan’s statement, Rachel and the others were similarly confused. Almost everyone was dumbstruck, Ken and Neil included.

“Selena, is your husband stupid? He’s choosing three million dollars over 100 million dollars?” Ken made a scornful smile before quickly adding, “That house of yours is so dilapidated. The last time we almost marked it as unfit for habitation. Although the experts later marked it as safe, I don’t think it’ll last much longer. With 100 million dollars, you can purchase a luxurious house. Why are you making this choice?”

“Selena, is your husband a moron? Is his brain functioning properly? Why would he make such a decision?!” Neil chimed in as well.

“You’re the moron!” Selena shot him a foul look. “Although I want 100 million dollars as well, I’ll respect my husband’s choice! He’s right. When he saved the boy, he had not thought of a reward! His mind was on saving the boy! That was his original intention!”

Hearing that, Jack immediately burst out laughing. He took a few steps forward and held onto Selena’s hand, saying, “It’s still my wife that knows me best. That’s exactly my intention. When I saved the kid, it was not for the money. That’s why I don’t want this money. This is not a transaction!” At that, Jack paused for a moment before continuing, “However, I won this three million dollars from the arena match. By the rules set, it’s mine. Although it’s not much, I’m not going to say no to it!”

Selena’s face turned scarlet. This person had actually held her hands on his own accord in front of so many people. Despite being husband and wife, she still felt as though she had butterflies in her stomach, unable to remain calm.

“Yes, of course. Cash, right? Go get it ready!” Keaton immediately walked up and gave the general manager a kick. “You stupid pig. What’s wrong with your eyes? You couldn’t even recognize my benefactor?”

The general manager turned around to look at Keaton, feeling wronged. How would he have known such a thing? He had only heard about it that night itself that someone saved a child at the zoo by holding down the Siberian tigers with his hand. At that time, he was even joking about which hero had subdued the tigers. After all, Wu Song in Water Margin could only handle one tiger, yet he managed two. Who knew that the child would be his boss’ son? Moreover the hero was actually the guy that took part in the arena match.

The general manager quickly carried two suitcases of cash over, totaling to three million dollars, and placed them in front of Jack.

“Brother, three hundred million dollars is really too little. You saved my one and only son. Why don’t you take a little more? If you only take three million dollars, my son’s life would seem too cheap. I’ll feel

really bad about it!" Keaton made a pained smile, trying once more to persuade Jack.

"It's not just three million dollars. There's also the waived bill, isn't there?" Jack smiled as he lifted the two suitcases of money and got ready to leave.

However, he stopped after giving it some thought. "If you're really going to feel bad about it, then stop this kind of underground boxing match. I'm telling you the truth. If you keep this up, I can have your bar closed!"

Keaton's expression darkened and lowered his head in silence for a moment before speaking, "Forget it, I'll stop running this place. Bloody h*ll, I'll take it as building good karma for my son. Money still needs to be made but it shouldn't be with violence!"

"It's good that you know!" Jack stated coldly, then led Selena down from the stage.

Quite a number of people could not resist applauding him. Although Jack's killing of O'Neal was due to luck, if not for his last hit, O'Neal might not have died.

Chapter 263

Furthermore, Jack was okay with refusing 100 million dollars. His spirit was absolutely admirable.

"This guy is just doing it for the cheers! Hmph, what's all this virtue signaling! Look at how poor he is!" Britney gritted her teeth, feeling pissed. At first she thought that Jack would be killed by O'Neal, then later she also hoped for people from the Roy family to kill him. She did not expect such a turn of events.

"This guy is really lucky!" Ken and Neil exchanged looks, both feeling helpless. Very soon, they joined the crowd and left the area.

Jack looked at the beautiful waitress and gave her a wave. He then took out 50 thousand dollars and

passed it to her. "This is your tip, just as promised!"

"T-t-that much?! Wasn't it 10 thousand dollars?" The beautiful waitress held the money in her hand, suspecting that this might be an illusion. It was too much. That was the first time she had such a big tip.

"what I said earlier was no less than 10 thousand dollars! I never said that it was only going to be 10 thousand dollars!" Jack chuckled, then said, "You're a nice person. You deserve this!"

"T-t-thank you sir!" The waitress nodded, extremely grateful. She had a feeling that the man before her was different from others. It was as though money was just a series of figures in his eyes, something insignificant.

When Britney, Dylan, and others saw that scene, they were all flabbergasted. Jack was really generous. Everyone quickly went downstairs to the first floor. Just as they were about to leave the building, they saw that two guards were just about to push two women out.

"Go away. What kind of place do you think this is? This is a bar, somewhere to eat, drink, and look for girls. What business do you have here?" grunted one of the guards as he shoved the other party forcefully.

"Please, I beg of you. Let us in to try our luck. There are so many rich folks inside. We're just trying to ask for some small donations to build a school for the kids in the mountains!" asked the woman with a pleading look.

The two women wore very simple clothes. Their lips were chapped and their clothes were patched up. In their hands was a promotional flyer. Of course, they also had some other documents with them. "Big brother, please be charitable. Let us go in and try. The elementary school in our area is too run down and collapsed during a thunderstorm some time ago. We're running out of options. That's why we're going around collecting donations. Otherwise, the kids won't have a place to study!"

"That's right. Dear brother, we're really not comen. Here's my teaching permit and this is our

principal!” clarified a younger woman.

“You’re so poorly dressed. If you go in, our business will be affected!” mocked the two guards by the door.

“Honey!” Upon witnessing the scene, Selena looked to the suitcase in her hand. “I don’t think they’re comen. It should be real! Why don’t we make a donation?” Selena made a kind smile, unable to let this pass.

“No way. You’re already so poor and yet, you’re still donating? what a joke!” Britney laughed mockingly.

Chapter 264

“Poor? could I afford two Porsches if I’m poor?” Jack snickered. He ignored Britney, then waved at the two women. “Come here for a moment!”

“He’s even claiming to have two Porsches. I must be dreaming!” Britney was even more speechless. Was that guy some boasting champion? How could he be so shameless to insist he had two Porsches?

The two women looked confused, but they approached him regardless.

“Sir, is there something wrong?” asked the principal fearfully.

“Show me your documents!” Jack asked after showing them a smile.

“Oh!” Both of them finally realized what was going on and took out their documents, passing them to Jack. It came along with some pictures of the school.

“Sir, would you like to make a donation? If it wouldn’t be a burden, I hope that you can extend a helping

hand, even one or 10 dollars would do!” The female principal appeared to be a little shy. However, for the school’s sake and their children, she bit her lip and spoke up.

“Sir, we’re really not conmen. If you don’t believe us, you can drive over and have a look. Our school is at...” The other female teacher quickly provided Jack with the school’s address.

“That area is quite poor indeed!” Selena sighed.

“Take it. All of it!” Without much hesitation, Jack passed both the suitcases to the pair. “Build a better school for the children. As for the remainders, you can use it to improve their meals or whatnot!”

“This...” The principal and female teacher were both stunned.

Selena was similarly shocked. At first, she only wanted to help them out a little. She did not expect him to be that generous and give them all their money. There was 2.95 million dollars left inside!

However, remembering that it was to build a school for children, her heart relented. “Take it. It’s quite some money inside. You don’t need to go around collecting donations anymore. Tomorrow, return earlier and rebuild the school!”

“T-t-this is filled with money?” The female teacher was skeptical. She then quickly opened up one of the suitcases to have a look and immediately gasped. Inside, the suitcases were packed with hundred dollars notes.

“Thank you. Thank you both! I-I-I will offer our sincerest gratitude in the name of the children of our area. For the children from our school, let me prostrate myself to you!” The female principal was at a loss for words, overwhelmed by gratitude. With tears in her eyes, she fell to her knees. The other female teacher followed suit after seeing that, prostrating herself toward Jack and Selena. “Thank you. Thank you so much!”

“Please get up. You should go back soon. It’s already so late in the night and you’re still running around for the children. It’s not safe. You should be more careful!” Selena smiled, feeling rather good after doing a good deed.

“We have no other choice. Without the school building, the children can only learn in the field. It’s fine if the weather is sunny but we can’t do it in the rain! That’s why we’ve tried our best to collect money, lowering ourselves to begging from others. It’s so we can quickly collect enough to rebuild the school building!” The female principal let out a sigh, then looked at Jack and Selena. “I really don’t know how to thank you!”

“it’s nothing. Money is something I have plenty of. I’m not bothered with this small amount!” Jack chuckled and waved it off like it was nothing.

Chapter 265

Selena was speechless. Jack was very kindhearted, but that boastful habit of his just could not be fixed. However, right at that moment, two red colored Porsches zoomed over at high speed with its blinding lights and pulled over in front of everyone.

“Sister, brother-in-law, your cars are really nice to drive! I feel that I’ve been getting so much attention when I drive on the street!” Ben came down from the car and tossed the key to Jack.

Xena had also gotten out of her car and threw the other key to Selena. “It’s so awesome. This is my first time driving a sports car. The feeling is really awesome!”

At that point, she added regretfully, “Too bad it’s not ours. Sigh, if only I can get one for myself!”

“You’re not going back?” Seeing that they handed both the keys over, Selena frowned.

“I’ve made plans with my friends to play games at the internet cafe later. They’re there waiting for us. We’ve gotten our fill of fun today driving your cars all night, so we’re sending them back to you now.” Ben snickered, then placed an arm over Xena’s shoulder and quickly took his leave.

“Honey, it seems we’ll have to drive one each!” Jack forced a smile, then got into one of the cars.

Selena shrugged, then got into the other as they quickly drove away.

“It seems they really don’t lack money!”

“Yeah. How can the gap between the rich and poor be this big!” The female principal and female teacher exchanged looks, then swallowed hard. The money in the suitcases should be around three million dollars, yet the other party donated it to them for building the elementary school just like that. Such people deserved to be wealthy!

“T-t-they actually own two Porsches! They look brand new!” Dylan was dumbstruck for quite a while before finally exclaiming, “It seems that they’re really rich!”

“Impossible. A bodyguard with 20 million dollars monthly pay? Are the people from the Drake family stupid? Moreover, that kid just got discharged from the military recently. It’s not even been a month. Did they pay his salary in advance?” Britney was all the more confused, feeling dissatisfied.

“how funny!” Hugh finally looked at Britney, Matt, Rachel, and others before saying, “Look at all of you, thinking you’re rich because you’re driving a BMW or Audi. You look down on them when you’re driving a car that’s worth 300 to 400 thousand dollars. How do you feel now? Don’t you feel embarrassed?”

“Sigh!” Rosa breathed out another sigh. No matter what they said, she was the poorest one. At first, she was already saddened by her monthly pay barely going over 10 thousand dollars. After hearing Selena’s situation, she even felt sympathy for her. Who would have thought...

Back at her house, Rosa laughed humorlessly. All of a sudden, she recalled something and immediately took out the name card Selena passed to her. After a careful read, she gasped.

“Oh my god, Selena is actually the purchasing manager of the Drake Dynasty Real Estate’s purchasing

department. The assistant manager position that Trevor said he's interviewing for tomorrow is actually to be Selena's assistant! And Trevor mentioned that the female manager's monthly salary was a hundred thousand. Isn't that Selena? Selena asked me to be her assistant. Does that mean..."

After analyzing it carefully, Rosa was shocked to her core. That night, there were plenty of times where Trevor mocked Selena. He even boasted about the fact that he had his girlfriend pull strings behind the scene. It would seem that Trevor would not be getting the assistant position on the following day!

"According to what Trevor said, this assistant's pay should be around 20 to 30 thousand dollars a month!"

At the thought of the high salary, Rosa jumped up excitedly and kissed the name card with all her might. It seemed like her chance for a good job had arrived.

"Selena, you're just too awesome. A person like Trevor deserves his fate!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 266-270

Chapter 266

"Jack, to be honest, the 100 million dollars is very tempting. After all, you would have had enough money for grandfather's birthday if we took it. But come to think of it, we can't take the money."

They went back home and had their bath. Selena was lying sideways on the bed while looking at Jack lying on the ground as he smiled and said, "I realize both of us might be meant for each other. Sometimes, we just seem to have the same thoughts! If I saved the boy for the money, I would've taken it. However, the money wasn't on my mind when I was saving him, so I wasn't going to take it!"

Jack smiled and looked at Selena who was dressed in sexy sleepwear. Then, he said, "Honey, Kylie seems to be fast asleep. Can I kiss you?"

Selena instantly rolled her eyes at Jack, "In your dreams. But I have a question for you. What are you

going to do with the stolen 3.8 million? Don't forget that mom set a time limit for you!"

Worried, she spoke again after she was done talking. "Also, we agreed to give mom only 10 million worth of betrothal gifts. You're the one who allowed her to take advantage of you and now she's asking for 20 million. On top of that, you have to compensate Ivan 10 million dollars and gifts worth a few ten million dollars. You have to prepare 40 million dollars in total on grandfather's birthday. How are you going to find that much money?"

"Don't worry! I have my own ways!" Jack said, unconcerned. He finished talking and after thinking for a few moments, he continued, "By the way, didn't you think Xena was suspicious? What if we put on a show with your mum? What do you think?"

"My mum? Will she work together with us? What if she doesn't want to work with us?" Selena was shocked. She wondered what Jack was plotting now.

"don't worry. If she doesn't want to put on a show with us, I'll tell her we're never going to get the money back! If she works with us, we'll get the money back very soon. What do you think? Anyways, knowing her personality, I think she'll agree to work with us!" Jack laughed as he briefed Selena on the details.

...

The next morning, Jack and Selena drove to work respectively. Selena arrived at the office. Work had just started and soon after, Sonia knocked on the door and came in.

She was holding two resumes in her hand. She walked up to Selena and handed them over to her. "Manager Taylor, these two are the selected applicants whom I picked out from a group of outstanding people through interviews. You can make your final decision between these two! One of them is a male, while the other is a female!"

She was done talking but seeing how Selena kept silent, she took another look at the resume and said, "Both of them are outstanding, but I would suggest you choose the male candidate. After all, males would be much more helpful if we need someone to help us drink during business meetings where

alcohol is present. Moreover, he just came back from overseas. His name is Trevor Turner and he's very good in all aspects!"

Selena nodded her head, "He just came back from overseas? Not bad indeed. Is he here now?"

Sonia nodded her head excitedly when she heard what Selena said, "He's here, he's here. He's right outside the door. Should I ask him to come in?"

"What about the other one? Although she's lacking in many aspects compared to the guy based on her resume, I would like to meet her in person before I make my decision!" Selena smiled at Sonia and said.

Sonia's expression changed drastically after hearing Selena say that. Fortunately, she had already prepared a backup plan. She frowned and said, "Manager, I'm not quite sure what happened to that lady. I told her to come for the interview at 9am but she did not show up until now. I called her and she said that she fell sick, so she couldn't come in."

Selena sneered secretly. She might have believed it if she had not been made unhappy after going to that party last night.

"Really? I'll give her a call then!" Selena grabbed her phone.

"Ah..." Sonia was shocked. The phone number was a fake number she had made up. She was not sure if Selena's call would go through. Moreover, the resume was fake as well. The person did not exist. She did not expect Selena to be interested in that person's resume.

Chapter 267

"What's wrong? You can't get through the phone?" Selena's face darkened as she questioned Sonia.

Sonia's heart jolted as she smiled awkwardly, "No, no, you can reach her by phone!"

Selena pretended to take out her phone and dialed the number. In fact, she was actually calling Rosa, "Hello, are you here yet? You have an interview today, remember?"

Sonia felt ashamed. She did not expect Selena's call to actually get through to the fake number she had made up. However, it was fine even if she could. The person on the other end of the call might assume that it was a fraud call. He or she might just hang up or tell Selena off.

"You're right at the company's door? Alright, you can just come straight in later!" Selena hung up after saying just that one sentence. "She's right at the door and is coming in now. Why did you say she was sick and couldn't attend the interview?"

"That's impossible!" Sonia was startled but quickly snapped back to her senses. It might have been a coincidence. The owner of the number might have also been looking for a job and was supposed to attend an interview today. Therefore, it must have been a coincidence.

"Why is it impossible?" Selena thought it was funny seeing Sonia's surprised face.

"No... Nothing. It's possible because there's this girl named Avril that's been fooling around with me!" Sonia laughed awkwardly before speaking to Selena again, "Manager, people like her are not reliable. You cannot hire her!"

"I know what to do!" Selena smiled.

"That's great!" Sonia nodded her head but was sneering in her heart. She secretly thought that no matter how long Selena waited, Avril would never appear because she did not exist!

"I'll take a look at the guy who just came back from overseas first!" Selena sat on her office chair. She leaned back, looking extremely relaxed.

“Alright!” Sonia was excited when she listened to what Selena had to say. She immediately exited the room.

Not long after, the office door opened and Trevor entered the room. He closed the door and smiled as he said, “Hello manager...” Trevor reached out his hand to greet the manager in front of him as he talked. However, he froze on the spot before he could finish his words.

After a few moments, he voiced his surprise, “Selena, why... Why are you here? What are you doing here? Are you a staff member? Where is the manager?”

Selena shrugged. “This is the manager’s office and I’m sitting here. What do you think I’m doing here?”

“You’re the manager? No way!” Trevor was in disbelief. “You make one million a month and are the one they called the beautiful manager?”

“are you surprised?” Selena laughed. “Someone was boasting about himself yesterday, determined that he would definitely get this job. Do you still think you can get the job now?”

Chapter 268

Trevor’s expression darkened instantly. He desperately wanted to dig a hole and jump into it.

He boasted in front of everyone last night. He even told everybody, including the details of his tactic to get the role. That was not the main point. What mattered most was he told everybody that the manager got the job through dishonest means in front of Selena. He said that the manager must be involved in some secret affair with the young master of Drake’s family. That was how she got the job and was paid well. He never expected Selena to be the one whom he had been talking about.

However, Trevor was thick-skinned. He laughed and said, “Selena, I was drunk talking yesterday. I hope you don’t mind what happened. We were old classmates. I believe I will be the best candidate to help you out.”

Right at that moment, a knock on the door sounded across the room.

“Come in!” Selena called at the door.

Soon after, Sonia came in through the door, “Manager, there’s a person named Rosa outside and she insisted that you called her here for an interview. It’s impossible, right? Our interviewee’s name is supposed to be Avril, right? Is she in the wrong department?”

“Let her in!” Selena smiled after she said.

Soon after, Sonia walked out with a confused face and brought Rosa into the room.

“Manager, what’s happening right now?” Looking at Trevor who was silent while wearing a gloomy face, she could sense that something was wrong. She could not help but ask softly.

“You’d better close the door first. It’s better if the other colleagues don’t hear us! Let’s save your face!” Selena said coldly.

Sonia knew that something was wrong, but still, she walked over and closed the door.

“Rosa, what are you doing here? Are you here for the interview?” Trevor’s expression could not have been grimmer. The position for the manager assistant was only open for one person. If Rosa was here for the interview, does that mean that his job would be scuppered?

Rosa smiled awkwardly, “Trevor, don’t you remember Selena giving me her name card yesterday? She said that I’m a capable person and asked me to call her if I want to change my job. I didn’t pay attention at that time. It was only when I got back home that I realized Selena is the procurement manager in this company. So I’m here for the interview now!”

“You know each other?” Sonia’s lips twitched violently. The current situation was worse than she imagined. She could not believe Selena was the one who called the lady over for the interview. Does that mean that the chances of her boyfriend, Trevor, to get the job were slim?

“Not only we know each other; three of us were classmates in university!” Selena smiled coldly and said, “I only found out that you are Trevor’s girlfriend yesterday. Trevor praised you a lot. He told me how capable you are, and told me how you backstabbed me by telling others I had an affair with the young master of the Drake family. I handle things open and aboveboard. I don’t play tricks, but who would’ve thought...”

Sonia was infuriated when she heard Selena’s words. She regretted very much having said such things about Selena. Things would not turn out this way if she attended the dinner yesterday. She did not follow Trevor to the dinner because her best friend asked her out to go shopping. She did not expect Trevor and Selena were university mates. Moreover, Trevor that bastard spilled everything to Selena. Selena must despise her a lot now.

“By the way, Trevor, I remember you saying that Avril’s resume is made up, right? Also, you mentioned that the one who made up the resume is your girlfriend, our supervisor here! Am I right?”

Seeing Trevor kept silent, Selena questioned him.

Chapter 269

Trevor gritted his teeth and lifted his head, “Selena, don’t be too excited. I’m just unlucky this time to fall in your hands. It’s just a position for an assistant. I refuse to do it now! I don’t believe I can’t find a better job with my abilities!”

“Hah, your abilities? How disappointing. You only knew how to spend your time on games when you lived overseas. Then, you come back and boasted to everyone, telling everybody you’re from overseas. Is that what you call your ability?” Once again, Selena laughed.

“Trevor, I don’t mean to blame you, but you really went overboard last night. If I was Selena, I wouldn’t dare to hire you!” Rosa sighed. People like him who loved to play dirty tricks would backstab you at any

time.

“who are you to make fun of me?” Trevor smiled coldly instead. His eyes looked evil as he said coldly, “I’m a man who will take responsibility for what I did. You don’t allow me to work here? I’ll leave then. I might even find a better job!”

He turned his head to look at Selena after he finished his words. Then, he scoffed, “Selena, stop acting like you’re all pure. Do you think I believe a manager like you can get a million dollars per month? The previous manager only got over a few hundred thousand dollars. How come you can get a million dollars? What is done by night appears by day.”

“How can you make so much without hooking up with the young master? I don’t believe it!” Trevor knew that everything was over and he would not get the job. So, he simply flipped out.

“Selena Taylor, you’re too much. How dare you humiliate my boyfriend? You’re so petty!” Sonia said angrily.

“Tsk tsk, how is it my fault now? You eliminated everybody and allowed your boyfriend to come for a second interview without having to go through the first one. Moreover, you made up a fake resume. You created a fake competitor so he had no rivals. I didn’t even blame you but now you’re trying to accuse me?”

Selena did not back down. She already let her off for what happened previously. She did not expect Sonia would use such means again. What mattered most was that she was the supervisor. One would never know what else she would do if Selena let her off the hook again.

“You’re blaming me? yes, I was the one who did everything. So, what are you going to do?” Fueled by anger, Sonia crossed her arms in front of her chest, “My man is a capable guy. I’m being nice to you by introducing him to help you out with work but look at what you’re doing, you’re mistaking a good man for a bad one!”

“Forget it, Sonia. I’ll leave. It’s not like I can’t find another job!” Trevor clenched his fist tightly and glared at Selena. Then, he opened the door, stomped out of the room, and slammed the door.

“Selena, you’re way too much! Don’t you know how to do something out of consideration for someone else? I’ve been working here for so many years. You’re already lucky enough to become the manager. I recommended my boyfriend but surprisingly, you didn’t even think of helping me!” Sonia gritted her teeth. Her eyes were burning with fire.

“You call that recommending? Recommending through such means?” Selena stunned. Then, she said, “Go out and do your work properly. You’re lucky I didn’t fire you!”

“Fire me? Do you even have the right to do that?” Sonia was infuriated, “I am the supervisor. You have to get approval from the human resources department to fire me. You don’t have the right to do so. Hmph! I’ll complain to my uncle about how you humiliate me today! He should at least transfer you to another department!” Sonia stomped out of the room angrily without another word.

“Close the door gently. Don’t ruin the door, otherwise, you have to pay for it!” Selena reminded her.

Chapter 270

“We’re screwed, Selena. I heard Trevor said that his girlfriend is a distant relative of the Drake family. Could...it be the uncle that she mentioned earlier? If it is really him, doesn’t that mean we’re in deep trouble? We don’t even know what nonsense she will tell him!” Rosa started to grow concerned after Sonia left.

“She’s really infuriated this time. It seems like she’s going to the Drake family. What if she talks bad about you in front of them? Will that put you in an unfavorable situation?”

Selena’s face darkened as she heard what Rosa said. She was worried as well. After all, they were relatives, and she could not guarantee what nonsense Sonia would tell the Drake family.

Moreover, she only started working a few days ago; would they believe Sonia or her, who was merely an outsider?

Rosa's concern heightened after seeing Selena's frown, "We're really doomed. Will they fire you if she really blabbers nonsense in front of them? If you're fired, that woman will surely come after me next!"

However, soon after, Selena let out a bitter laugh, "I believe if James is capable of becoming the richest man in Eastfield, he must be a man who can differentiate between what's right and wrong. Moreover, Miss Drake was the one who employed me. I'm sure we'll be fine!"

She looked at Rosa at the side after she was done talking. Then, she said, "It's up to you. If you're afraid that you will be fired because of me once you start working, you can choose to not work with me. You can go back to your current company. After all, you're getting paid quite well in your current company!"

Rosa bit her red lip and kept silent for a few moments then, she made up her mind. "I don't care anymore. I will follow you. I can look for another job if I lose this job. I don't want to stay in that company anymore!"

Selena was gratified. She nodded her head in satisfaction, "Alright, here is some information about our company; you can take a look first! I'll bring you to your table later and we'll proceed with the employment procedures!"

"Hey, Selena, how much is my salary then? I'd better make this clear now!" Rosa smiled as she asked.

"23 thousand. You will become our formal staff after one month and your salary will be increased to 30 thousand. Our company will provide you with social insurance and housing fund!"

"You will be working five days a week with two rest days. Working hours will be eight hours per day except for Friday. You are only required to work half day, which is four hours on Fridays. You only have to work until the afternoon!" Selena smiled as she explained the benefits to Rosa.

"Oh my god, the benefit provided by the company is amazing. This is totally my dream job. This is what I always thought a job should be like! I had to always work overtime in my previous company. I even had

to bear others' workload. I was so exhausted!"

Rosa was so excited that she rushed forward and hugged Selena, "Selena, thank you so much. Thank you!"

Rosa seemed to be very happy but Selena smiled bitterly, "Aren't you worried that both of us would get kicked out if Sonia succeeded in complaining about us?"

"I'm not afraid. I'm going all out now! This is a chance to change my fate!" Rosa laughed as she said.

Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry, "Look at you, you say this is a chance to change your fate? You'd better look for a boyfriend soon; who knows maybe that might be a chance to change your fate? Find a guy who is handsome, rich, and tall!"

"This is not an urgent matter. I want to find a guy whom I really like! Women must first learn to be independent!" Rosa said excitedly.

...

At that moment, Jack was accompanying Miss Drake, who was relaxing as she bathed under the sun in the yard.

"He's surely living a comfortable life!" Feeling envious, a few bodyguards from the Drake family spoke.

"I know right. This guy is not under the control of the commander and the assistant commander. He can get off work anytime he wants and all he needs to do is to inform us. Moreover, the master said that he can follow Miss Drake around if he's free. He said he can become Miss Drake's personal bodyguard!" Harvey, the assistant commander, could not help but smile bitterly. He would not even dare to dream of having such a nice job.

Following Miss Drake around, going shopping with her, and helping her carry her stuff; what a laid back life. What mattered most was that Miss Drake was a known beauty. Even if there was nothing between them, he gets to follow her around and it would be visually pleasing to see such a beautiful lady every day.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 271-275

Chapter 271

“Hey, why do you always look so solemn and cold?” Tanya looked at the handsome yet persistent man. She could not help but laugh and asked, “Your wife was the beauty queen of Eastfield who was approved by all men back then. Come on, can you share with me how you trick this pretty lady into liking you? I only heard bits and pieces of your story. I don’t know much about you!”

“There’s nothing much to talk about!” Jack did not bother to entertain her. He set aside, smoking silently.

Tanya could not help but to roll her eyes toward Jack, “Such a lame person. In that case, can you tell me stories about the battlefield? Weren’t you on the battlefield for five years? Do you have any scars on your body?”

“Yes!” Jack smiled bitterly, “However, they’re all healed now. I don’t have any scars left, so, you can’t see them! But it doesn’t matter; I only wanted to survive and grow stronger back then. In the end, I did it!”

“You’re really good. Even Harley is no match for you.” Tanya laughed and said, “Too bad our head commander just went back to her hometown, otherwise, she would’ve challenged you if she knew about you!”

“Are you sure?” Jack frowned.

“it’s just a friendly competition! This lady loves exchanging skills with others. If she found out that an

expert is here, she would for sure challenge you to a fight. Moreover, your pay is way much higher than hers; it is only normal for her to be interested in you!” Tanya chortled.

Right at that moment, Sonia walked in through the gate fumingly.

“Hey, what is she doing here? Isn’t she supposed to be at work?” Tanya frowned as she saw her.

Seeing Sonia heading straight to the door of James’ villa, Tanya’s curiosity grew, “Let’s go and see what’s happening. It seems like Miss Sonia is a bit angry. I wonder who made her so angry!”

Jack frowned when he heard that. Sonia picked on Selena last time. Could it be related to his wife again?

Soon after, they followed her. As soon as they reached the door, Jack could hear Sonia grumbling inside. He grabbed Tanya’s arm who was about to push open the door and pulled her back. Tanya blushed when Jack grabbed her. All her life, no man would dare to pull her hand like what he just did. Moreover, he was merely a bodyguard. What a bold guy.

She looked at Jack who had already loosened his grip. Jack was listening to what was happening inside. It seemed like he did not care about pulling her hand at all.

“Uncle, this new procurement manager is terrible! She ticks me off and she’s very arrogant! I worked my butt off to find her a suitable assistant, but she was being ungrateful and chased that person away. She even scolded me, saying that I’m flattering myself!”

“Guess what that lady did? She called her university mate over to interview. She’s abusing her power!” Sonia started to complain as soon as she saw James.

“she’s playing the victim now!” Jack sneered. He heard clearly every word that came out of Trevor’s mouth yesterday.

However, he did not expect Sonia to be so unreasonable. She even came here just to complain.

Fortunately, he was there listening to their conversation. Otherwise, she might slander his wife even more.

Chapter 272

Looking at Jack's slightly angered face, Tanya who was standing at the side could not help but laughed. Who would've known that this guy loved his wife so much? Moreover, looking at him from the side, his cold face appeared very handsome and domineering. Tanya was entranced for a moment.

"No way. Selena Taylor is the eldest miss of the Taylor family. She did quite well back then when she was managing the Taylor family's business! I believe in her; she's not a nepotist! Maybe her friend is really a capable person! There must be some misunderstanding between you two!"

James smiled calmly and said, "Sonia, you've been working for the Drake family for years; I know you might feel unhappy with the sudden presence of a manager. However, we decided to do this after much deliberation. You just have to cooperate with manager Taylor, alright?"

"Uncle, that's not true! I'm not such a petty person! It's manager Taylor; she only wants to hire her friend... Moreover, she even said she wanted to fire me. She really ticks me off!" Sonia spoke again.

"a person like you should be fired!" Right at that moment, the door opened. Jack was the first to enter the house.

Tanya felt ashamed. Which part of that guy's imposing manner made him look like a bodyguard? She, the eldest miss, who was trailing behind Jack's back, looked more like a bodyguard instead. However, whenever she remembered how her father asked her to befriend Jack because he might be a King of War, she told herself to endure it!

"You, why are you here?" Sonia was shocked when she laid eyes on Jack. It was only then that she remembered Jack was working there as a bodyguard. She also heard that he earned 20 million dollars per month. She did not expect someone would hear her complaining. She felt guilty and immediately

lowered her head. She did not dare to look into Jack's eyes.

"If I'm not here, will I find out that you're accusing somebody else when in fact you are the one who is guilty? I am Miss Drake's personal guard. Isn't it normal for me to be here?" Jack's hands were behind his back as he lifted his head slightly. He oozed an aura that no one else had.

Tanya who was behind him wanted to choke him badly. She asked him to protect her. How did he become her personal bodyguard? Wasn't it too much to say the word 'personal'? Moreover, what kind of personal bodyguard would walk ahead and act like he was the boss? He was stealing her spotlight.

Seeing Sonia remained silent as she felt guilty, Jack spoke to James, "Master Drake, this woman is absolutely shameless. The person who she recommended as my wife's assistant was actually her boyfriend. Here's the thing..." Jack briefly told James the whole story.

"Sonia, is James telling me the truth? Why do I feel like you are the nepotist here? Moreover, according to what Jack said, Rosa is a capable person as she could take up more than her own responsibilities. Do you think your boyfriend is suitable to become the assistant manager in our company?" James's face darkened as he said in a slightly angry tone.

"He's talking nonsense!" Sonia refused to admit. She stepped forward, lifted her head furiously, and started arguing, "You're Selena's husband. Of course, you would defend her! Hmph, both of you are working hand in glove to accuse me."

Slap!

Jack gave her a slap across her cheek, "I can say in all honesty that my wife and I are truthful people. How dare you blame us for accusing you!"

Chapter 273

"You, how dare you hit me?" Her chest heaved with anger as she cupped her face with her hand, "You bastard. You're just a bodyguard, do you get it? That means you're a servant. How dare you hit me!"

Even the assistant commander calls me sister politely when he sees me. Who do you think you are? Yes, I said both of you are working hand in glove to accuse me. So what?"

He gave her another slap.

"You..." Sonia was terrified. She never imagined that the bodyguard in front of her was so daring.

"Uncle, can you please say something? What kind of bodyguard is he? Is he your servant? Since when servants were allowed to hit their boss?"

Feeling aggrieved, she took a few steps backward. Tears poured down her cheeks as she looked at James with an aggrieved look. Her thick makeup was all smudged. She looked like a ghost! Sonia thought Jack was humiliating the Drake family for hitting her and James would beat him up. After all, they were the Drake family and she was part of their family. Jack went overboard this time; she thought James should at least fire him and chase him out of the house or beat him up.

However, she never expected James to scold her indifferently instead, "Who told you to deny your own mistake and slander others? You deserve it! Jack is a veteran. He is someone who is willing to shed his blood and sacrifice his life for the country. He's an upright and respectable man. How could you say that he's accusing you? I would've hit you too if I was him!"

James was embarrassed. Jack slapped her right in front of him, not giving him an out. That guy was too reckless. However, James was a wily old fox. He immediately knew why Jack dared to be so bold. It meant that Jack had no scruple. He did not give a damn for the Drake family. In that case, his speculation was confirmed. There was something more behind his identity!

Jack was stunned as well. He was speechless. He felt shy hearing James praising him with so many commendatory terms.

He could only laugh awkwardly, "Master Drake is indeed the richest man in Eastfield. You surely have a wide range of vocabulary!"

Sonia was utterly confused. She did not understand what was going on. Rooted to the spot, she was at a loss. She wanted to rage quit so badly. However, she gritted her teeth and told herself to hang in there as the salary was decent and she could also earn from Ivan's side. Moreover, she could not make impulsive decisions as her boyfriend was now, jobless.

"Even if I said the wrong thing, it's not right for him to hit me like this, isn't it?" Sonia was still unhappy. She felt extremely aggrieved.

"Next time, think twice before you speak!" James replied to her, "Alright, I assume you're not in a good mood today since your boyfriend couldn't get the job. Take a day off and go back to work tomorrow. Of course, I won't stop you if you want to quit!"

"Uncle!" Sonia was speechless. Then, she started to speak in a pettishly charming manner, "I'm so devoted to the Drake family, it's impossible I would want to quit. I even wanted to help the company to improve and become stronger. Why not transfer Manager Taylor to another department since I don't get along well with her?"

James went black for a moment. Then, he said, "What about I transfer you to another department?"

Chapter 274

"No, no. That's not necessary!" Flustered, Sonia immediately waved her hand after she heard what James said. Then, she turned around and walked away, "I'll take two days off, then I'll go back to work."

Sonia knew that she only had the opportunity to earn money and takedown Selena by staying at the procurement department. She would lose her opportunity if she was transferred to another department.

Feeling bored, Sonia was wandering around the streets after she left the Drake family. Suddenly, she received a call from Ivan. Soon after, they agreed to meet at a cafe.

“What happened? Don’t you have to work today? Judging from the look on your face, it seems like you’re not in a good mood!” Ivan laughed and said to Sonia.

“Don’t even mention it. This Selena, she really pisses me off! I wanted my boyfriend to work in our company and become Selena’s assistant. In that case, we can see each other every day and my boyfriend can tip me off if there’s anything important. Who knew...” Sonia sighed and told Ivan everything.

“Your boyfriend is looking for a job? Well, our company is hiring right now. We have some vacant positions but the salary is a bit low. It’s around 15 thousand. Do you think your boyfriend will be interested in taking up the job?” Ivan wanted to please Sonia as he needed her help.

After all, if he could get his hands on the South Hill Real Estate project, the Taylor family did not have to worry about money for the coming two years. Moreover, his position in the Taylor family would be stable by then. He would for sure become the inheritor of the Taylor family and Selena would have nothing to do with that.

Five years ago, the old master favored Selena a lot. All the relatives in the Taylor family thought that Selena would become the inheritor of the Taylor family and take over the family business.

Unexpectedly, that woman got pregnant with Jack’s child. Moreover, she insisted on keeping the child. That gave him a chance to rise again.

“Really? That would be great. The salary is considered decent enough!” Finally, Sonia encountered something that was worth being happy about. She smiled and said, “Thank you very much Young Master Taylor. I’ll ask my boyfriend to contact you tomorrow morning!”

“Alright. Ask him to come straight to my office tomorrow. He’ll become my assistant.” Ivan laughed, although the Taylor family’s business was considered medium-scale and the salary they offered was not high, it was still decent enough.

“Mm, that’s awesome. I hope you can give him more valuable advice and guide him well in the future!” Sonia smiled politely.

“you’re welcome!” Ivan laughed and it was only then that he started talking about the main topic, “By the way, Supervisor Neal, I’ve already prepared all the information for you. Have you collected the information about our competitors?”

“Don’t worry, I’ve already collected information on a few competitors and they are no match for you! However, Selena and I are not on good terms these few days so I don’t feel like approaching her. Give me two days’ time; I’ll ease things up and help you get the project! Anyways, I tried my best and this is all I can do. I’ve already compared you with a few competitors and have already turned down a few of the strong competitors!” Sonia smiled and took a sip of her coffee.

“Thanks a lot. Don’t worry, I promise to give you every benefit that we’ve agreed on once our plan succeeds.” Ivan was excited. Finally, he saw a ray of hope.

...

In the afternoon, Jack and Selena went back home as soon as they got off work.

However, Selena was carrying a bag when she got out of the car. A lot of things were packed inside the bag. It was tied up with a rope.

Chapter 275

Seeing Xena and Ben present, Jack and Selena looked at each other and smiled.

“Mom here is three million in cash. The Drake family rewarded Jack for his good performance.” Selena smiled and shouted out to Fiona who was not far away.

Fiona’s eyes lit up as she heard what Selena said, “Really? That’s great. The Drake family is really rich. How could they reward him with so much money?”

“Oh, I went out with the second miss today. Two punks who did not recognize the second miss tried to bully her. So, they ended up getting beaten up by me! They were happy with what I did so they gave me three million cash and I brought the money back!” Jack smiled and said again, “Mother-in-law, your 3.8 million dollars was robbed the other day, right? To make up for your loss, this three million here is for you. Go to the bank and deposit the money tomorrow morning!”

“Alright. That’s great!” Fiona was very excited, “Boy, seems like you’ve been doing quite well recently. However, don’t forget that you still owe us 20 million worth of betrothal gifts on Grandpa’s birthday. Otherwise, we won’t admit that you are our son-in-law!”

“Don’t worry... I will give you the exact amount!” Jack laughed as he spoke.

Xena went back home after dinner.

The next morning, Fiona and Andrew brought the bag and went out riding on their electric scooter.

Jack and Selena had been hiding near the bank they visited the other time.

“If the motorbike robbers appear again this time, it meant that Xena was the one who informed them!” Jack smiled coldly and said, “I think there’s a high possibility that they will appear again!”

“Ben adored Xena so much. If he finds out that Xena was the one behind all this...he must be very heartbroken. Sometimes, I wish Xena was not the culprit!” Selena sighed.

Soon after, they could see Fiona and Andrew on the electric scooter. They parked the electric scooter next to the road.

“Honey, Jack said that the motorbike robbers will appear to rob our money if we come to the bank again. Do you think it’s possible?” Carrying the bag, Fiona said, “How dare that kid threaten me. He said we won’t find the three million dollars in seven days’ time if we don’t put up an act with him.”

“let’s try. I thought it was weird too. The motorbike robbers aren’t God; how can they sense that we’re here and come rob us just like that?” Andrew laughed and said, “Grab the bag tightly. Don’t let others snatch the bag away like the other time.”

“Don’t worry, I’m alert this time. There’s no way they can rob my money so easily.” Fiona laughed.

Right at that moment, two motorbikes appeared from an alley on the other side. Each motorbike was carrying a person behind. Fiona immediately became alert when she saw them revving up the engine and rushing over. It seemed like the motorbike robbers were really here. Seeing the motorbike getting closer to them, Fiona turned around and held the bag tightly in front of her chest. The robber tried to reach for the bag but he grabbed nothing. The motorbike stopped immediately. The men got down from the motorbikes and started snatching the bag in Fiona’s embrace. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 276-280

Chapter 276

“Oh, what do we do now? Where’s Jack? Tell him to come quick! The robbers on motorbikes are coming!” Fiona was scared out of her wits. Her arms were tightly wrapped around the money; she fought with every bit of her strength.

Andrew wanted to grab the other man, but he was shoved until he fell onto the ground instead. The two men immediately approached Fiona for the pouch.

At this moment, Jack sprinted into view.

“Hurry, Jack. Hurry! I can’t hold on much longer. The money is being taken away!” Fiona shrieked when she saw Jack.

Unfortunately, her strength could not match that of the two young men. The pouch in her hands was snatched away.

“Stop!” Fiona leaped forward at the thought of the 3 million dollars in that pouch, latching onto the man who just got onto the motorbike.

“Let me go, you old b*tch!” Shock jolted through the man when Fiona latched onto him. He kicked Fiona until she tumbled onto the ground. The bike took off in a cloud of dust. Two other bikes sped forward, following the first bike.

However, Jack was only standing a few meters apart from them.

“Stop!” He hollered, his expression darkening.

“Run over that mother*cker!” One of the men driving the bikes accelerated straight into Jack’s direction.

“Jack, get out of the way!” Selena cried when she saw this, shock rippling throughout her.

It would be nothing but trouble if the bike hit Jack at the speed it was going.

However, just as the bike was about to hit him, she never expected Jack to dodge so artfully. With another maneuver, the bike suddenly flipped. The two people on the bike were sprawled on the ground in a flash and tumbled a good few meters. Lacerations ripped quite a few areas of their skin. The other bike so happened to be rushing forward as well, but it rammed into the fallen bike. The rider slammed on the brakes, but the bike flipped anyway. The two people on it also tumbled onto the ground, squealing in pain.

At this moment, Fiona, Andrew, and Selena finally ran over.

“B*stards. Do you have a death wish, taking my money away?” Fiona was so furious she could explode. She immediately picked up the pouch containing the money before landing a few vicious kicks on one of the men sprawled on the ground.

Jack also walked over. With each kick, he sent the four men flying to a tree by the roadside, as though they were soccer balls.

“Sir, please—please spare us!” One of the men begged in wretched gasps after he realized just how strong Jack was. He ripped his helmet off.

His three comrades simply lay there, helpless. They knew that they had picked on the wrong person this time. They were doomed.

“What about the 3.8 million dollars you guys snatched two days ago? Where is it now? Tell me. Also, how do you know that my mother-in-law comes here to keep her money?” Jack squatted and asked, his expression placid.

“We—we don’t know anything about that 3.8 million. It was a coincidence—we saw that this old lady had a pouch in her hands and thought that there was money inside. That’s why we acted on a whim. You’ll let us go right, sir? We won’t dare to do this no more!” One of the men’s gaze flickered before he explained the situation to Jack.

Jack chuckled coldly. He stood back up and pressed a foot onto the man’s arm. “I can easily break this arm of yours if you don’t tell me the truth!”

The other man was crying out in pain although Jack had not exerted much strength. “I was wrong, sir. I was wrong. Please, not so far. I’ll tell you—I’ll tell you everything. All right?”

Chapter 277

“Well, tell us quickly. I’ll have you know that he’s super strong. There’s a possibility that he’ll kill all of you if you don’t talk!” Fiona did not have a shred of pity for the snatch thieves. She spoke with venom in her voice, and she constantly launched her foot toward them. For the past two days, she had not eaten or slept well, thinking about her 3.8 million dollars.

“I’ll tell you! We handed the 3.8 million to our boss after we took it. And he gave each of us a share of

it!” The man immediately spilled everything, evidently terrified.

“Then how do you guys know that we keep our money here? It can’t be a coincidence!” Jack asked them again. He already had the answer, but he needed proper confirmation. Furthermore, there was no way that Andrew and Fiona would think that the culprit was Xena. The two of them—especially Fiona—had already treated Xena as a daughter-in-law.

“It—it was Xena Jackson who told our boss. She’s also a member of the Motorbike Robbers. She gives us information, and if we get the money, she gets twenty percent of the share all to herself. She gets even more than we do!” The man immediately revealed.

“Xena!” Fiona’s features contorted; she almost wanted to faint. Her head buzzed.

“No way. How could she...” Andrew was speechless. He never imagined that Xena was the mastermind.

“Now I remembered. The two times when we spoke about keeping our money, Xena and Ben were there. There’s no way Ben would have done this. But I never thought... We treated her so nicely, and she...” Realization washed over Andrew. He looked at his son-in-law. “Jack, both of us were just a witness to your show, right?” he said. “I guess that you suspected Xena a long time ago.”

Selena cut in before Jack could speak, “Dad, it has nothing to do with him. The main point is that I thought that there was something off about Xena. That woman can’t be up to anything good, so I suspected her. I just told Jack to find a way to make something happen to reveal the truth!”

“I don’t care who it is! I just want my money back!” After the shock had subsided, Fiona shrieked even more furiously, “It must have been the four of you the last time! Give my money back. Give my 3.8 million dollars back!”

“We didn’t make much money, Ma’am. We only got about 10 thousand each here. More importantly, the boss of the Motorbike Robbers took the money. Of course, other than him, it’s Xena who took the most. The other members of our gang got only a few thousand each. They’re probably just gonna use it for dinner or something!” The man had a bitter expression. His injuries were pretty serious now. He wondered if he would be beaten to death if Fiona continued to kick him like that.

“You’ll still have to go to work later, Selena. How about this? You take Mother and Father back first, and I’ll get them to take me to their boss. I’ll help Mother find her money.” Jack said to Selena after he thought for a while.

“All right. But you have to be careful, understand?” Selena bobbed her head. She was well aware that not only would she and Fiona not be of much help if they went, but they might be of hindrance to Jack instead. It would be better for him to go alone.

“Jack, I’m entrusting my money into your hands. You have to get it back! Besides, you told me that you would compensate for my losses if you couldn’t find it within a week!” Fiona reminded Jack. She did not care whether he would be in danger.

“Let’s go, Ma!” Selena flashed a mirthless smile.

“We’re not leaving just yet. We’re already right outside the bank. We’ll go back once I’ve deposited this 3 million. Jack told me that it’s for me!” Fiona said, grinning. She took the pouch and headed toward the direction of the bank.

“Ma, take a look inside that pouch. There’s only scrap paper in there. What money are you talking about?” Selena’s lips curled into a bitter smile.

“What?” Fiona released a gasp of disbelief. Now she understood why Selena had stopped her from opening the pouch while they were playing along; it was because there was no money inside there all along.

She opened the pouch. Anger suddenly gripped her, and she just plopped onto the ground. “My money—3 million! Gone!”

Selena cast Jack a look; she did not know whether to laugh or cry at this.

Chapter 278

Andrew, too, did not know whether to laugh or cry when he saw his wife on the ground like that. “Don’t you get it? There was never any money inside. Miss Tanya never gave Jack a bonus. It was a trick to lure Xena.”

“Let’s go, Ma. We’ll go back home first. I believe that Jack will get your 3.8 million dollars back very soon!” Selena helped her mother to get onto her feet, and the three of them disappeared quickly.

Jack watched as the four men slowly stood up, their faces ashen. He pondered for a moment. “Let’s go,” he said. “Bring me to your boss.”

“Sir, can’t you spare us? Our boss will beat us to death if he ever found out that we betrayed him!” One of the men immediately pleaded, terror seizing his veins.

“Then I’ll beat all of you to death now if you don’t take me to him!” Jack threatened them, chuckling.

“I advise you to not go at all,” another man said. “You seem really strong, but if you do, not only you might not be able to get the money, you might even die a nasty death!”

“You guys don’t have to worry about this. Just take me there. I won’t stop you from leaving if you want to then!” Jack emitted a humorless chuckle. He did not believe that he could not take on the Motorbike Robbers.

“All right then, punk. Just don’t regret everything once you get there. Our boss is a real mean character. Anything he takes, it’ll never see daylight again!”

“And killing someone in Eastfield is as easy as breathing for him!” The man from before spoke to Jack again.

“Really? Then I want to see how mean he can be for myself!” Jack shrugged his shoulders.

As the four men were not critically injured, Jack let them rest for a few minutes before forcing them to get back on the bikes, with him riding pillion to see their boss. At that moment, in a small forest on the outskirts of the city, plenty of motorbikes were gathered and parked in one spot. Over twenty youngsters sat on the ground, smoking on cigarettes.

“You were amazing, Xena. You helped us get so much money two days ago, and now we have even more!” A man who wore a singlet and had a lollipop stuck into his mouth grinned.

Xena took a drag out of her cigarette. “Young Master Howard, don’t be so modest. It’s not like you’re lacking money. You’re the son of Mr. Howard of the Dragon Gods. Do you really place that much importance on a few million?”

“That’s right, Boss. You’re too modest. Your family has plenty of business around here. You just open your mouth and your old man will give you—what, a billion, ten billion? All for your expenses. That’s such an easy thing to do too!” A grunt spoke up, smiling.

“Is that really the same though?” The young master of the Howards chuckled, then he walked over to a beautiful young woman’s side. He cupped her chin, his lips curling. “My father earned his own money. I spend the money I earn myself. It gives me more comfort, and keeps me grounded! Besides, he’s such a miserable b*stard. He only gives me five million a month. How’s that enough!”

“No way. It’s way too little, especially for the son of the Dragon Gods. Your gang is considered one of the best around here. Of course, five million isn’t enough!” The grunt from before quickly said in a flattering tone.

They waited for another two minutes before Young Master Howard began to grow impatient. He glanced toward the direction of the city entrance. “Jeez, Nick and the others been gone for too long. Xena, can your sources be trusted?”

Xena leaned against a tree. "Of course," she said, a wicked smile on her face. "Don't you worry. That old couple will definitely deposit 3 million dollars!"

Chapter 279

"Alright. you'll get 600 thousand this time. Quite a pretty sum!" Young Master Howard said, chuckling.

Xena sat on the ground. "At first, I dated Ben because I thought he was a Taylor. Even if he was kicked out from the Taylors, it doesn't mean that his family wouldn't have any money," she said. "Then I dated him for so long, and only then I discovered that that b*stard's family really doesn't have much money. It pisses me off. It's such a loss for me!"

She paused for a while here before continuing, "If I hadn't gotten used to playing online games with him, and if he hadn't been such a fantastic gamer, I would have left him long ago. I never thought that the return of that b*stard's brother-in-law would give me an opportunity to get some money!"

Young Master Howard walked till he was before her. He pressed her against the ground and planted a wild kiss on her lips. Then he sat on the ground too, unsatisfied. "Then did he take advantage of you, babe?"

"No way. With his looks, letting him hold my hands was already a miracle!" After Xena said that, she took the hand of Young Master Howard and leaned her head against his shoulder. "I like you, Young Master Howard. That brat is nothing. He's just giving me an opportunity to get some money. He even took me to a dinner among the Taylors. If I can sniff out any other Taylors with good potential, I'll get some money off them as well."

"Hah! You're really money-faced!" Young Master Howard burst into laughter. Xena was someone who truly worshipped gold. He was all too aware of this.

Yet this woman still wanted to marry him. That was nothing but a fever dream. If this woman was not that good looking, or if her figure was not that great, or if he did not enjoy the nights they spent

together, he would have not bothered with her.

He was the young master of the Howards. Although he was a young master of an underground society, it was still a powerful society. They were definitely a force to be reckoned with, and they did not lack money. That was why he would never marry someone like Xena if he had to get married.

“Jeez. I love money, but I love you even more!” Xena pouted, trying to appeal to him.

“What about this then? I’ll give you another ten percent from today’s money, so you’ll get thirty percent in total. How does that sound?” Young Master Howard said, smiling after he thought about it for a while.

“Really?” Xena’s eyes brightened once she heard that. Thirty percent was a full 900 thousand—another 300 thousand more from the amount they had agreed upon earlier. This was probably a small sum to Young Master Howard, but it was a huge amount to her.

“But—you already know this. Don’t go and see that idiotic ‘boyfriend’ of yours tonight. I want to get the royal treatment from you!” Young Master Howard gave a wicked chuckle, lightly smacking her thigh as a hint.

“Don’t worry. I’ll definitely arrange everything nicely tonight!” Xena said, grinning.

The men surrounding them could not help a mirthless smile as they watched this exchange. This woman loved money more than life itself. So long as you had money and gave her a few hundred thousand dollars, she would probably sleep with just about anyone.

“They’re back. They’re back! Jesus, they’re finally back after being gone for so long!” At last, the man who was watching the city entrance spotted two motorbikes speeding toward them.

“Hah. As long as they’re back, all is forgiven. My men, now we wait to split the money!” Young Master Howard stood up and said, his eyes crinkling into a narrow line.

“Why don’t I see a pouch though? They’ll probably need a big one to contain three million dollars.” A woman frowned as she thought about it.

Chapter 280

“No way. Fiona and Andrew are pretty old. No way that the four of them failed to snatch the goods.” Xena frowned when she heard that. She walked over to take a look. At the sight, her face contorted in disgust—because there was no pouch in sight.

“Useless! Four men and they couldn’t rob an old couple?” Young Master Howard’s expression hardened. He did not look very pleased.

Although three million dollars was not much to him, he never liked failing in anything he did.

“It looks like there are three bikes, but an extra passenger is riding on one of them!” One of the men exclaimed when they came closer into view. The bikes zoomed forward. The people were full of distrust. Five men came down from the bikes.

“Bo–boss...” One of the men had lacerations on his forehead; blood streaked his face. He ran over to Young Master Howard. “We—we didn’t manage to get the goods,” he said, terror laced in his voice. “We fell into a trap!”

“Useless!” Young Master Howard threw a vicious kick at the man. Then he noticed Jack. “Who’s this punk?” he asked his four men.

“Ja–Jack? Why are you here?” Xena’s eyes flickered; her expression morphed into one of a horrified surprise.

She had already thought everything through. She needed to find a way to get money for herself. Even if she did not marry Young Master Howard in the future, it did not matter so long as she had money of her own and could live a comfortable life. If that did not work out, she still could marry Ben, in spite of the trash he was. Or she could leave the city by herself, start anew in another place. She never thought that

Jack would actually come. This was a clear indicator that he had seen through her ruse.

“You know him?” Young Master Howard was stunned, “Why does the name Jack sound familiar?”

“Young Master Howard, this punk is a skilled fighter, and he is a bodyguard for the Drakes. He’s also Selena’s husband, and Ben’s brother-in-law!” Xena immediately said to Young Master Howard.

“A skilled fighter? How skilled, exactly?” Young Master Howard flashed a sardonic smile. “Oh, so this is the good-for-nothing who leeches off his wife,” he said. “I remember you telling me that this punk practically destroyed the Taylors. If not for him, Selena would never have been kicked out of the Taylors. What a shame. That beauty was snagged by such a swine!” Here, he stretched his limbs lazily. “I heard that Selena is very attractive,” he said, expression teasing. “It’s a pity that I don’t take interest in women who are married and have had a kid. I probably would like to fool around with her if she wasn’t married!”

“You beat up the four of them, eh, punk? Not bad!” A grunt quirked his lips into a mirthless smile.

“The punk didn’t really beat us. But he must be pretty skilled anyway. He managed to take hold of our bikes and flip them over. Who knows what would have happened if the bikes didn’t fall!” One of the men who was injured spoke up, trying to defend his dignity.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 281-285

Chapter 281

Jack lit up a cigarette and took a slow drag out of it before he spoke leisurely. “I’ve never expected that you would mix around with such vermin, Xena. Plotting to steal money from Father and Mother? How dumb can you get?”

“Dumb?” Xena grew angry when she heard that. “You’re just a military man. I know you’re a skilled fighter. Ben had told me before. And so what? You’re just a bodyguard. You’re not that great.” She splayed her arms here. “At any rate, I don’t have money and I need money, and I want to get money. Was I wrong?” she continued. “I don’t think I’m dumb. I got 760 thousand dollars from the last lot alone,

no?"

Since Jack had already found out, Xena decided to throw away all pretenses. "Do you understand? So what can you do to me? It would have been better for you to stay put. You're just digging your own grave by coming here!"

"You've been with Ben for such a long time now. Do you really not have any feelings for him?" Anger sparked in Jack. Although he did not talk a lot to Ben, he could see that Ben truly liked Xena, and intended to marry her.

"Hmph. Feelings? What good are feelings? Do they feed me?" Xena folded her arms across her chest, a cruel smile lighting her lips. "He's just a tool. If he wasn't such a fantastic gamer, and if I, myself wasn't interested in games, I would have dumped him a long time ago."

However, she quickly thought of something: Jack came here alone. Did that mean that he did not have much evidence on her? It would be even better if Jack just died here, and her identity would not be revealed. Furthermore, there was a possibility that she could swindle that 3 million dollars into her hands. Of course, the two Porsches were worth a pretty penny too. It would be nice if she could sell them off.

"Young Master Howard, you can't let this punk leave this place alive now that he's here," she said simply as she thought of all this. "My cover will be blown otherwise!"

"Hmph. Looks like you still intend to put that Ben to some use!" Young Master Howard said, grinning.

"Gee. Of course, it would be for the best if my cover wasn't blown. What if it comes in handy later?" Xena said, smiling.

"Hmph. Don't worry about it, and you don't even have to mention it. That punk beat up four of our men. He's not getting away today! Besides, he ruined my grand scheme of the day. Three million was just within our reach, and this little punk had to ruin it all! It's been two years since I, Ruben Howard, came

out to do business, and this is the first time I've tasted failure!" Ruben cracked his neck and scanned his surroundings. "This patch of forest isn't too bad, and it's pretty secluded. It'd be a great place for his grave!"

"Hmph. I'm just here for the 3.8 million dollars. But it looks like I'll have to beat the arrogance out of you by trashing quite a few people around here!" Jack chuckled. He threw the cigarette onto the ground and stamped it out.

"Kill him!" Ruben waved his arm, declaring his order. "You're just a military guy. What do you think you are? God? Today, you punk, you had the choice to take the easy way out. And yet you forced yourself into hell instead!"

In a flash, seven or eight grunts surrounded Jack.

"Boss, the old couple never had three million. It was just scrap paper and stuff like that in the pouch. No money. This punk lured us into a trap!" One of the men who had been beaten up earlier came before Ruben, reporting everything with the utmost vehemence.

"You're pretty clever, punk!" Ruben flashed a chilling grin. His eyes contained nothing but pure venom. "You'd better make sure he gets beaten till he's dead ten times over then."

"No way. It was fake?" Xena was speechless. She had thought that she could swindle the three million dollars when she went back. She never expected it to be fake.

Chapter 282

"Listen to me, punk. It's no use even if you get on your knees and beg for your life now!" The grunt was extremely arrogant. They had plenty of men. He did not believe that they could not take care of one man.

Slap!

In a split second, Jack seemed to have apparated before the grunt. Then with a flick of his hand, he sent a slap flying toward the side of the grunt's face.

"I—" The grunt took a sharp intake of breath. That was way too fast. He did not even have time to react and, he had gotten a slap. He closed his fingers into fists, getting ready to punch Jack. The other men surged forward. Yet Jack just grabbed his arm in a flash, and with a mighty swing, the grunt was sent spiraling into the men that surged forward. Then Jack released his grip, and the grunt flew, crashing heavily into a nearby tree. Blood spurted from his mouth as he landed on the ground with a resounding crash.

"Bunch of weaklings. I take good care of you every day, and you're still this useless!" Ruben understood that Jack was not an easy one to beat when he saw that. "All of you, get him," he said carelessly. "Get him together. It's obvious that they weren't enough!"

Here, everyone besides Xena and Ruben rushed toward Jack. The men from before picked themselves up from the ground and charged toward Jack as well.

"It looks like I'll really have to kill some of you!" Jack loosened a breath. The grunt who had been flung onto the tree was now lying on the ground, vomiting blood, unable to get up. He had thought that this would be enough to scare this bunch and force the boss to give him the money. It was evident that he was too naïve. This bunch would not give up so easily.

Snap! Snap! Snap!

Jack broke the necks of seven or eight men in rapid succession. The remaining men stopped in their tracks when they saw the bodies on the ground.

"Bo—boss, looks like they're dead!" One of the men ran over and placed his fingers under his comrade's nose before sputtering those words.

They were not the same. They were not actually part of the Dragon Gods; they just liked drag racing. Besides, they did not really fear anything under Ruben's leadership. After the many times that they had successfully snatched things, they grew bolder. This bunch of people were dubbed the Motorbike Robbers. Anyone who knew what they were, did not dare to provoke and offend them. They never expected that this military veteran would suddenly turn up—and he would be such a skilled fighter. He was bold too, killing several of their men in a flash. Normally, they would take knives to hack some limbs off, but they never killed anyone before. Naturally, they were frightened when they saw this. Several men were so terrified that their legs trembled.

"F*cker! Do you really take me as a pushover?" Ruben ran toward the back of his bike and whipped a gun out, aiming it at Jack. "I never expected you to be this good, punk," he said.

"Looks like those useless underlings of mine are of no match for you." He paused for a while before resuming nonchalantly, "But I have a game in mind. Do you think that you're faster, or will my bullet be faster?"

"You're amazing, Boss!" One of the grunts' eyes danced with maniacal delight when he saw that. "That mother*cker dared to beat me, and he killed so many of our men. We'll teach him the meaning of 'no mercy' today!"

"Hah. Don't worry. I won't finish him in one shot. I'll shoot his leg first, then both. I'll let him feel the pain for a bit, then we'll decide what to do after." Ruben grinned.

However, he was quickly stunned in his spot. It was because Jack actually bent down and picked up two stones. The other man stared at him, smiling.

"Do you really think that picking up two tiny rocks will do you any good, punk?" Ruben flashed a cold smile. "This is the first time I've seen something like this. I've already got my gun aimed at you, and you pick two pebbles up. What use is that?"

"Of course they're useful!"

Chapter 283

“Although I’m not afraid even if I don’t use rocks, I still want to play around with you too!” Jack said lightly as if he did not give a sh*t about the other man.

“Not bad. Hah!” Ruben laughed and opened fire at Jack’s thigh.

In a blink of an eye, Jack flung his arm forward. The two pebbles shot forward. One of the rocks happened to hit the bullet, deflecting it. The other rock whacked straight into one of Ruben’s fingers.

“Ah!” Ruben shrieked. The finger that had been hit immediately snapped, as though he had been hit by a bullet. Half of the finger fell onto the ground. The sudden flare of pain made Ruben cry out in agony. The gun slipped from his grip and fell onto the ground as well.

“Boss!”

“Young Master!”

The remaining men stared at the situation, goggle-eyed, wondering if this was real.

“F*ck! Kill him!” Ruben looked at the gun on the ground, then turned toward one of his men by his side. “Pick up that gun and kill that punk!” he snarled.

The man immediately bent over to pick the gun up. His body was still filled with shock. He did not know if it was a coincidence that the punk’s rock hit the bullet. As for Ruben’s finger, they did not see what had happened clearly. They suspected that the bullet had ricocheted and so happened to find its mark in Ruben’s finger.

While Ruben was yelling, Jack was already rushing toward his direction. He quickly reached the man at the speed of a cheetah. The man’s hand did not even reach the gun when Jack kicked him away. Jack

then bent down and quickly snatched the gun, standing up and leveling the barrel at Ruben's head.

At the moment, Ruben was in so much pain that cold sweat perspired down his forehead. Blood streamed down his hand. However, he had no thoughts for the wound on his hand. He had been the one aiming the gun but in a few seconds, that same gun was being aimed at his head instead. This abrupt turn of tables made his brain numb.

"Bo-boss, how-how could this happen?" The remaining men were terrified, at a loss of what to do. Two of the men were so scared that they wanted to take off, but they were afraid that even if Jack did not kill them when they ran away, the Dragon Gods would not let them go either. The Dragon Gods were a powerful force. They were an underground society, but their strength deterred even the aristocrats from provoking them.

"You'll regret your decision if you kill me, punk! I'm telling you, I'm the son of Master Howard, the grandmaster of the Dragon Gods!" At this moment, although Ruben was terrified, he still showed some backbone, unwilling to give up.

"The Dragons Gods?" Jack's forehead creased, thinking of a past incident. That Brother Scar and Ned and their men, who numbered about two hundred in total—did he not kill them all already? He never thought that the boss of the Motorbike Robbers would be the son of the grandmaster, Master Howard. What a coincidence.

Ruben's chest loosened in relief when he saw that Jack did not speak. It looked like Jack was afraid now. After all, no one heard of the name of the Dragon Gods and claimed to be unafraid.

"What's wrong? Afraid? Heh. Since you're afraid, just give the gun to me, you punk!" Ruben smiled, then spoke.

"You think I'm dumb?" Jack said coldly.

It was hilarious. This punk really took him for a fool, thinking of using the Dragon Gods' name to scare him into giving the gun away. That would be like digging his own grave.

"My father will never forgive you if you kill me. You'd better think this through!" Ruben flashed a mirthless smile and spoke.

"I just wanted to get the 3.8 million back. I never thought that you would want to kill me. From the looks of it, I have no choice but to kill you!" Jack gave a cold smile before continuing, "Let's say I kill you and everyone here. Do you think your father would really find out that I did it?"

"You can try if you don't believe it!" Ruben chuckled and said, "Do you really think that after coming out of the city on my subordinate's bike, there would be zero witnesses along the way?"

"Not bad!" Jack grinned. "That's why the best course of action is to just wipe the entire Dragon God gang, right? I can't get a good night's sleep otherwise!"

After he said that, Jack aimed the gun at Ruben's thigh and opened fire. Ruben screamed in pain and keeled over, all color leeching from his face. He never expected this punk to be so vicious, shooting straight at him.

The remaining men were so terrified that they shrieked. They wheeled around and took off. They felt that the Jack who stood before them was practically a madman. He did not fear death anymore; he was a frenzied, living killing machine. They were people who had never crossed the line of killing others. Who would have thought that Jack had brushed against death many times? Compared to Jack, they were just a small fry.

Jack opened fire, the shots ringing throughout the forest. The men all dropped onto the ground in silence. Jack's skill with the gun was practically godlike.

Xena shrieked in terror. It was because only she and Young Master Howard were left. At that moment, the barrel of Jack's gun was pointed toward her. Young Master Howard was so terrified that he sat on

the ground. A jolt of pain spiked up his leg. He clenched his teeth. However, he did not care about all of that now. He was more worried that Jack would really kill them all. Today, he met a man who truly did not fear anything.

“Don’t—don’t kill me! Please don’t kill me. I just wanted money! I joined their gang to get some money! You can’t kill me—I’m Ben’s girlfriend! I’m begging you. You’ll be my brother-in-law if I marry Ben. We’re family!” Xena was so frightened that she fell onto her knees and pleaded. Pure panic filled her expression.

“Get out of here! Get out of my sight!” After Jack thought for a while, he added, “Do not breathe a word about what happened today. I’ll make sure you die a painful death if you don’t do that!”

“I—I’ll get out of your sight!” Xena was scared out of her wits. She quickly ran, got onto a bike, and rode off.

Chapter 285

“Young Master Howard, right? ‘Does Jack dare to kill you?’ What do you think of this sentence right now?” A mirthless smile hung on Jack’s face. He said, “You could’ve just returned me the 3.8 million when I first asked, but now...”

“I—I’ll give you! Please spare me! I beg you!” Ruben knelt before Jack, petitioning for his pitiful life. He only realized how stupid of him to provoke a veteran now that he had experienced his viciousness first-hand.

“Fine. I’ll spare you. But make a call to your dear Father and ask him to send over 3.8 million dollars right now. It has to be 3.8 million, nothing less! I’ll be over for a joint. Let me warn you first, you better not play any dirty tricks! It would be useless after all. And you don’t want the Dragon Gods to be in trouble!” Jack continued in a lazy tone. Ruben’s thigh was severely wounded; the blood was practically spewing out from the gunshot wound.

He walked toward a big tree and stood under it, lighting up his joint casually and relaxingly.

He would not be merciful toward those who deserved to die. Hope and subtle joy sparked within Ruben as he watched Jack walking away. He was given an opportunity to make a phone call too!

Ruben immediately pulled his mobile phone out of his pocket with his hand covered in blood, dialing his father's phone number. "Father! I'm dying! Quickly come and save me!"

Ruben cried into his mobile phone as soon as Howard picked up the call. "There's a b*stard called Jack White! He wanted to kill me, Father! He will only spare my life if you bring him 3.8 million dollars in cash! Otherwise, I will be dead!"

"W-What!" On the other end of the line, Mr. Howard slammed the table at his son's words and stood up abruptly from his chair. "What the f*ck! Who the h*ll is this Jack White? How dare him! Is he digging his own grave?"

Not long after, thoughts flashed through his mind and he said, "It's strange, my son. You're abducted right? If it's an abduction, it's impossible that the kidnapper only asks for 3.8 million dollars. You should be worth more than a billion!"

Ruben was speechless. Why on earth was his father still annoyed by the amount when his son's life was at stake.

Ruben whispered into the phone, fearing that Jack would overhear it. "Father, the real situation was..." He explained. After explaining to Master Howard, Ruben continued, "Father, my leg got shot, bled a lot and it's still bleeding! I can't bear it much longer if you don't send help over right now!"

"All right, my son! I will send someone to get you." Master Howard responded, and then immediately ordered his men, "Son of b*tch! Send 300 men to get Young Master Howard and we will have to let that b*stard know the consequences of going against the Dragon Gods!" Master Howard gritted his teeth. He felt about to burst from rage. How dare this veteran provoked his men, and even shot his son!

This was not the worst. The most devastating news was that this veteran did not flinch even after

knowing that the men belonged to Dragon Gods and Ruben was the Young Master of the Dragon Gods!
This punk took the Dragon Gods clan lightly!

“N—no. Don’t!” Although Ruben was keen to kill Jack right now, he was not an idiot; he replied instantly, “No. You can’t send this many people, you will be waking up a sleeping wolf! We’re at a jungle outside of the city, and what if he saw these men from afar, and immediately shot me and then ran into the woods? Our men will find no one by the time they arrive! I will die in vain!”

Master Howard held his breath, listening to Ruben’s words. He was in a frantic state earlier on, only wanting to rescue his son, and let the b*stard know the consequences of provoking his clan, but did not think of this. Fortunately, the smart son of his reminded him of it. Ruben was right, if that b*stard saw so many people marching toward them, he would probably kill Ruben out of fear.

After some moment of thinking, he then said, “Hmmm. How about I send the five Tigers of the Dragon Gods over? They are all skilled combatants! It should not be a problem for them to rescue you out!”

There were a total of six skilled yet vicious men in the Dragon Gods. Any of them was skillful enough to defeat one hundred alone and even hundreds for some of them! They were widely known as the Six Tigers of the Dragon Gods, however Scar was killed recently and now there are only the Five Tigers left. Ruben truly believed that if the Five Tigers came here, Jack would be so dead!

“Hmmm. It’s better to bring the cash along too, to prevent anything bad from happening!” Ruben advised his father after giving some thought to the matter. At least the cash would make Jack let his guard down, it will make him think that we’re really using the cash to exchange my life! Otherwise, I fear that I will immediately end up a corpse when Jack does not see the money!” Ruben finally hung up after a few more words.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 286-290

Chapter 286

“Young Master Ruben, what’s taking your phone call so long? You wouldn’t be trying anything now, would you? I told you to bring me that 3.8 million dollars in cash, you wouldn’t be calling for help now, would you?” Jack noticed the phone call took a while before he hung up therefore his question.

“How could I? I only ordered them to help arrange that 3.8 million dollars for you. Don’t worry, they will arrive real soon!” Ruben immediately replied as he panicked.

“Really? I’ll show you what happens if you lie to me!” After Jack made that cold statement, he actually tossed the pistol toward Young Master Ruben.

“Ouch!” The pistol struck Ruben’s thighs which infuriated him. He immediately picked it up and was about to toss it back at him, “Goddammit, don’t you dare cross the line...” Ruben paused as he said that, it was only then did he realized that Jack had tossed him a pistol. “you truly have a deathwish. You actually tossed me a pistol?”

Ruben felt ecstatic. It seemed Jack did not pay much attention when he tossed the pistol over.

He immediately aimed the pistol at Jack then said, “Don’t move, don’t you dare pick up a pebble. If you even dare move a muscle, I will end you.”

Jack laughed as he noticed Ruben’s expression. He then stood up.

“Die!” When he noticed Jack moved, Ruben was worried he would pick up a pebble again, so he immediately aimed the pistol at Jack and pulled the trigger twice. However, he was speechless at the very next second. There were no bullets in it.

“What? Impossible!” Ruben’s expression turned extremely bitter since this was such a great opportunity to murder Jack. He never expected there would be no bullets in the pistol.

“Young Master Ruben, do you think I’d toss the pistol to you if there were bullets in it?” Jack chuckled while he stretched. He then said, “I was still testing you. I didn’t expect you to fail so spectacularly!”

Ruben had almost passed out from being infuriated. This brat was too witty. Fortunately, he did not beat him up. After finishing a cigarette, he patiently waited on the side. Not long after, two SUVs sped over.

“There are only a few people here. It seems, Young Master Ruben, you are quite the honorable man!” Jack chuckled. However, he was quite aware that for the people in the Dragon God Clan, after shooting the boss’ son’s leg and breaking his finger, they would never have dropped the whole thing. Besides, it was not easy to cross the mafia anyway.

“Well, of course, we are all honorable men so obviously, we’d honor any word given!” Ruben scoffed in his heart. It seemed only death would await for this brat.

Both SUVs were parked nearby. Five people got out and two of them were each holding a leather box. All five of them eyeballed each other then took a glance at Ruben before slowly making their way over. Jack was standing in front of Young Master Ruben while calmly staring at those five men. He could tell these five men were no ordinary ruffians within the Dragon God Clan. Based on their footsteps and the faint aura emanating from their body, Jack could tell these five men should be quite powerful. They might be quite similar to Scar’s power level from previously.

Chapter 287

The main reason why the Dragon God Clan could have such a huge influence in Eastfield was because of these few powerful men.

“You sure are bold. You actually kidnapped our young master. this is my first time ever seeing someone this bold in the years I’ve lived in Eastfield!” One of the bald men chuckled coldly. He then looked at the pile of corpses on the ground and said, “It seems your combat skills aren’t too bad. However, all that you’ve taken care of are merely trash to the Dragon God Clan. You will die when you encounter someone truly powerful.”

Jack chuckled and took a step forward. “you guys wouldn’t want to kill me now, would you?”

He noticed Jack was inching closer to Ruben and his expression immediately dimmed. Although they

were powerful and their speed was also without a doubt, fast but their distance was still quite far from Jack. Moreover, Jack was a retired veteran and if he was able to survive five years on the battlefield, he naturally would have some form of impressive skills. Therefore, they believed that with Jack's abilities, by the time they reached him, he could swiftly murder Young Master Ruben in an instant. Not to mention, Young Master Ruben looked inhumanly pale and the whole situation did not seem very optimistic.

"that's a misunderstanding. All but a misunderstanding!" That bald man chuckled before saying, "Come on now, brother, release our young master and we'll hand you the money. It's only 3.8 million dollars anyway and everything will be fine! Our young master's life isn't only worth this much money!"

"it's good that you guys see it this way!" Jack laughed before walking toward those men.

When he noticed Jack approaching them, he was instantly stunned. Since usually, should Jack not hold a knife or a gun to threaten Young Master Ruben while both parties closed in on each other before making the trade? However, this guy ignored Young Master Ruben and instead was approaching them on his own accord? If that was the case, would they not have the opportunity to immediately murder this man? However, he was quite powerful hence, the best outcome would be avoiding any direct conflicts against him.

"Come on now buddy, take it!" The bald man and the people around him were all extending an arm toward him before handing the leather box to him.

They understood very clearly that Jack would use both hands to pick up both boxes. When both of his hands were full, that would be the opportunity for them to strike. Then, Jack would be caught off guard. Since both of his hands would be full, a single direct attack from them would no doubt be lethal to him.

It turned out, everything was as they had predicted. Jack smiled and reached out with both arms then accepted both boxes. As Jack was accepting both boxes, both men reached out and drew a dagger from within their sleeves then attacked at the same time. Both daggers were charging toward Jack's chest. Both of their attacks were extremely fast and the most important part was how in sync both men were. One was attacking Jack on the left and the other on the right, sealing off any chance of Jack's escape.

However, Jack was in complete control of the whole situation. Although their speed was incredibly fast, in Jack's eyes, they were nothing. With an immediate wave of his hands, he flung both boxes outward from his hand one at a time.

"Thud, thud!"

With two movements, both men were hit directly by those boxes as they were shot out immediately. That strength was oddly powerful. If any normal human was to fling both boxes out, nothing much would happen. However, when Jack flung those leather boxes, the impact shot both of them outward as they crashed landed on the ground immediately after. The bald man who was struck first felt as if his arm had almost broken. The pain was so intense, his entire arm was shaking.

Chapter 288

"Such powerful strength!" One of the men who was in a slightly better condition got back up from the ground immediately while staring at Jack with a serious look.

The remaining three men immediately surrounded Jack. Therefore, all five people had Jack completely surrounded.

Young Master Ruben let out a sigh of relief when he noticed Jack was completely surrounded. He exclaimed, "You lot don't kill him immediately. Beat him up nicely and don't give him a quick and painless death."

That bald man let out a bitter laugh before saying, "Young Master Ruben, this guy isn't a pushover. Even if we can kill him, it'll be a very difficult thing to do!"

After Young Master Ruben heard that he gasped and said, "No way, right? You guys happen to be the Five Tigers of the Dragon God. Although there's six of you initially, unfortunately Scar was killed. Our Dragon God Clan obviously does not need to bend to the wills of the other clans."

"This man was a soldier for five years and anyone who can survive on the battlefield for five years

obviously wouldn't be a pushover. It seems it'll be a one in a million chance to ever encounter a man like this!" A man with a tiny beard spoke.

After he was done speaking, he flipped over his palms and grabbed onto the same dagger from earlier before saying, "However, it's very unfortunate for him to run into all five of us at the same time. Don't worry, Young Master Ruben, this guy will die today!"

Young Master Ruben instantly felt delighted after hearing that bearded man make such a confident claim.

"didn't you guys say that you guys valued honor the most? Didn't you guys say that you guys were not planning to kill me and it's merely a matter of 3.8 million dollars?" Jack chuckled as he spoke.

"You have to be really naive if you believe that! Our Dragon God Clan has seen all kinds of awful things. you've beaten our young master to such an extent, do you think we'll be able to let you go?" The bald man coldly exclaimed.

"That's right. You know, our young master's status is quite a precious one and the truth is, 3.8 million isn't really a concern but since you dare make a move on the members of our Dragon God Clan, you've sealed your current fate!"

After the bearded man was done speaking, he squatted slightly next to Jack, and with a slight twitch of his foot, the dagger shot out of his hand. The blade morphed into a greyish glint as it flew directly toward Jack's thighs.

Jack could clearly tell the man had no intentions to murder him yet or else, that blade would charge at him in a much more lethal way. This meant, he only wanted to torture Jack before murdering him.

"Is that all you got?" As fast as his speed was, it was incredibly slow to Jack's eyes. He immediately reached out to grab his opponent's wrist before giving it a gentle squeeze.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound could be heard and the bearded man’s arm fractured from the wrist down. If it was not for his skin and tendons keeping it in place, it would have fallen on the ground already.

“Ah!” The bearded man’s dagger instantly fell on the ground. That intense agonizing pain caused his face to cramp. After a loud shriek, his entire body recoiled back.

Jack kicked the dagger with the tips of his foot which caused it to instantly shoot out and stab the bald man’s thighs as he was getting ready to attack.

“Ah!” The bald man cried out in pain and his expression looked extremely bitter in that instant. Shocking flashes could be seen at the corner of his eyes.

Not only was Jack’s speed incredibly fast, his movements were as fluid as flowing water. Anyone who could pull this off would be masterly skilled. It seemed he was able to clearly see through their every move.

Chapter 289

However, the bald man was also violent. He immediately pulled the dagger out of his thigh while fresh blood spewed out like a geyser. He then took the dagger and started charging at Jack. When he charged with the dagger, he cracked a grin at the edge of his lips. That was because the attacks of three other men from the different directions had landed.

Four men except the bearded man with the broken arm were attacking Jack from four different directions. Four powerful foes had Jack surrounded and based on the angle of attacks, it would be impossible for anyone to dodge out of the way. Those other three men all felt like Jack could never escape this time.

However, all they could see in that instant was a blur. With a single jump, Jack’s movements were so fast, he contorted into a very odd position, completely avoiding their attacks. He then came behind one

of them and with a sweeping kick, that man fell on the ground.

When the other three men realized something was amiss, Jack's attacks were already in action. It did not take too long for those three men to fall on the ground.

There was another dagger in Jack's hand. An ancient dragon picture was carved on the dagger's body. His dagger was unimaginably sharp and just when all four men had just stood up, Jack made a full circle slash while those four men stood frozen on the same spot.

All four men slumped over immediately. Fear was still fresh in their eyes and a huge slash wound could be seen on their necks. Due to how fast Jack's speed was, that dagger was not stained by blood and it took two to three seconds for the blood to start pouring from the slash wounds on their necks.

"No, impossible!" The bearded man who had a broken arm was so terrified, he was losing his composure. He never expected that even with a fully surrounded attack on Jack by five extremely powerful men, would end up like this.

He was skeptical that this guy was no ordinary veteran. This guy had to be insanely powerful, he might actually be a major. As he looked at the four corpses lying on the ground, the bearded man no longer cared if Young Master Ruben lived as he turned around to escape.

Unfortunately, even with the chances that Jack gave him, within two seconds, a slash wound could also be seen on the bearded man's neck. He had the same frightened look as he slumped over on the ground. It was only then did Ruben realized just how terrifying Jack was.

The five tigers were all actually single-handedly murdered by him.

"No, impossible. Who exactly are you? If you're not a marshal then you should be a King of War!" Ruben knew there was no escape for him since his leg was already injured. Although he was afraid, he had no intention to escape because his escape would be impossible.

“Originally, I was planning to let you live after getting my 3.8 million!” After Jack smiled, he added, “However, the condition we agreed on was for you to not play any tricks when I allowed you to make a phone call. I didn’t expect you to not appreciate your final chance. You only have yourself to blame!”

“Who exactly are you? Marshal or the King of War?” Ruben seemed displeased with his own death since he refused to believe Jack was a simply retired veteran.

However, the intel Xena told him this brat had merely served in the military for five years and he made some minor contributions, nothing significant enough.

“Guess higher!”

Chapter 290

Ruben had always thought he was quite intelligent. Therefore, if Jack was not a marshal, he would be a King of War. Since it was only in those situations could someone murder five of their Dragon God Clan powerhouse.

The position above the King of War would be the nine Gods of War. However, the identities of all of them were all announced on T.V. Hence, everyone knew who they were.

Amongst the nine of them, none were named Jack White and he wanted him to guess higher?

“No way? Could there be a tenth God of War? You weren’t made public?” Ruben frowned and he knew that he would be dead soon since Jack would never let him go. However, he wanted to know who exactly this guy was.

Suddenly he had a eureka moment as he gasped and said, “You, you’re the Supreme Warrior! Yes, that has to be it, the Supreme Warrior was originally planned to be made public but was canceled at the very last minute. Therefore, the identity of the Supreme Warrior had become a mystery!”

With that thought, Ruben's heart was shocked. He never expected to cross the Supreme Warrior for a measly 3.8 million dollars. The existence of the Supreme Warrior was the peak of all of Daxia, one who was capable of calling the winds and rains on a whim.

"Haha!" Finally, he burst out laughing as he said, "I truly never expected that I will be able to meet the majestic Supreme Warrior. Alright, after gazing upon his true face, I have no regrets dying!"

After he was done speaking, he stood up while gritting his teeth and said, "Come on now, make it quick and painless, you'll have my thanks!"

Jack never expected this kid would behave more like a man upon his death!

Jack made a backslash, turned around, and walked toward both leather boxes. He said, "I originally intended to completely level the Dragon God Clan but since you greeted death in such a manly way, I will allow your father and your relatives to live!"

Any man who showed no fear upon death was something Jack could respect regardless of any evil deeds that man had done. When he approached the leather boxes, Jack took out his cell phone and gave Lana a call. After leaving behind a message, he returned to the city with those boxes.

...

"You came back with the money?" When he just entered the courtyard, Fiona ran up to him excitedly.

When she noticed both leather boxes in Jack's hands, Fiona was ecstatic as she said, "Awesome! It seems like my money has returned!"

After she was done speaking, she snatched the boxes over, placed them on the floor, and opened them to take a look.

“Holy sh*t, it’s really back. My money, oh my money!” Fiona was extremely emotional as she gave both stacks of money a kiss each.

“Oh mother-in-law, money is really dirty and it’s riddled with germs!” Jack let out a bitter chuckle as he reminded.

Fiona looked up and rolled her eyes at Jack before saying, “I don’t care if it’s riddled with germs or not even if it’s poisoned and as long as I’m poisoned to death by money, I’d be completely willing!”

Jack felt awkward after hearing that as he said, “You should hurry up and keep them away just to make sure no one else who walks by notices it. Money shouldn’t be exposed out in the public, do you understand?” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 291-295

Chapter 291

“Right, right, right. You have a point!” Fiona frantically kept her money away and closed the box before saying, “You finally did something useful. You only used a day or two to retrieve the money I lost, it seems that you’re not so useless after all!”

“Not only is he useful, I think I’m starting to like him!” Andrew chuckled and hopped around twice before doing a few squats. He then said with a smile, “Look, Fiona, it’s all fine now and I’m like a normal person now. I can now jog with this leg!”

“It’s actually better now!” Fiona was also surprised since Jack claimed he could heal it in a week’s time and she did not expect it would actually heal. It was a miracle.

However, she soon thought about something as her expression dimmed. She said, “What’s there to be happy about? Your legs were normal in the first place anyway. It was all thanks to him that your leg ended up like that and now you’re actually happy? Hmph, it’s merciful enough to not have him repay the losses!”

“You’re right, Ma, this was my fault and I should reimburse the losses. Tell me, how much do you need?” Jack cracked a bitter laugh and did not take any of those remarks personally. That was because it was true that Andrew’s leg ended up like that due to him. If he did not sleep with Selena on their wedding night, their entire family would not have suffered for five whole years. Hence, it was well within reason for Fiona to blame him.

“Forget it then. Just focus on getting the 20 million prize money ready for the old master’s birthday. Don’t even think about us acknowledging you and even touching our Selena without the 20 million dollars!” Fiona exclaimed immediately. The more she thought about the horrible ordeal from back then, the more infuriated she became. She was starting to suspect if she had owed him in her past life to have caused a chain reaction for their family’s suffering.

“Don’t worry, don’t you worry. Not a penny less!” Jack nodded.

“Jack, a week has passed but you’ve only worked for over twenty days. Unless the Drake family agreed to give you an advance payment for your 20 million dollars wage, how else would you be able to fork out that much money?” Andrew’s attitude toward Jack had obviously changed drastically. At the very least from his observation in recent days, Jack was a great husband and an amazing father!

Moreover, not only was Jack skilled in combat, his medical skills were unparalleled. He never expected that Jack would be able to heal his leg when the specialists were unable to. So much so, he was not even required to take any medication. All he needed to do was to be massaged by Jack every morning while getting acupuncture with a few silver needles and his leg got progressively better. This was a miracle to him.

“Don’t worry, I will get the money for my father-in-law!” Jack laughed and said, “Miss Tanya is quite close to me and I believe if I tell her about it, she would have no problem giving me a two to three months advanced payment of my monthly wage!”

Andrew let out a sigh of relief after hearing it. “You can relax now. If he could fork out that much money, our daughter will never leave him then!”

“Young Master Michael mentioned that he’s willing to fork out 50 million dollars and can hold a spectacular wedding even! Hmph, I’m not actually hoping for him to be able to fork out this much cash!” Fiona seemed slightly unhappy.

Chapter 292

“Wedding?” Jack was stunned before saying with a smile, “I also owe Selena a wedding but don’t worry, after the old master’s birthday, I will give her a wedding of a lifetime!”

“You?” Fiona scanned Jack before speaking in a very disdainful tone, “You? You alone want to throw a wedding of a lifetime? Who would believe that? I think it’s more like holding a very embarrassing wedding rather than that!”

“don’t boast so blindly. How can such little money be enough for a wedding of a lifetime? You’d be impressive enough if you can actually give the old master a gift that costs more than 10 million and make our family proud!” Andrew chuckled. Even though the wedding back then was held in a very lackluster manner; it was done similarly to a gathering meal for the Taylor family which embarrassed Selena into oblivion.

However, that was five years ago and since Jack’s and Selena’s child had already grown up, Andrew never took it personally. Now that both Jack’s and Selena’s monthly wages were not low and as long as they worked well, their life would naturally be much better than how they were back then.

“Don’t you worry, Father-in-law, I owe this to Selena so naturally, I will give her a wonderful wedding!” Jack smiled calmly then said, “That’s right, let’s talk about this when the time comes. I’m not in a hurry to let her know yet, so I’ll surprise her in the future then!”

“if you can keep to your words and hold a wedding of a lifetime to make it up to our Selena, I will not blame you for the five years of our suffering!” Fiona chuckled while crossing her arms in front of her chest. She was obviously not buying what Jack said.

Not to mention, Jack even proclaimed he would prepare a gift that would cost over 10 million dollars for the old master. A gift like that was extremely rare. It was uncertain just what kind of a gift Jack would

prepare then.

“Oh right, what should we do about Xena? It was her conspiring with the motor robbers to snatch away that 3.8 million of yours! When I went over, I saw her with the gang of motor robbers too!” Jack said after some thought.

After Fiona heard it, she furiously clenched her fists and said, “I’d rather you not bring up Xena. Bringing her up infuriates me. Our Ben loves her so much and yet she conspired with the motor robbers to snatch money that belongs to our family? Truly infuriating. I’ll have Ben break up with her when they come back. I refuse to believe that my handsome son couldn’t get a girlfriend!”

After Jack heard her, he cracked a bitter smile and said, “Xena noticed me spotting her, and I’m afraid she might not have the courage to come back home now. Sigh, it’s getting late now, I haven’t gone to the Drake family home yet, I should get going now!” After Jack was done speaking, he turned around and left swiftly.

After Jack left, Andrew told Fiona, “Honey, look, my leg has fully recovered. It’s quite flexible too!”

As Andrew spoke, he hopped around a couple of times and said, “I feel like Jack isn’t too bad. His monthly wage is 20 million and that means, he will have 200 million a year. Moreover, he’s nice to Selena and Kylie. In a year or two of them working there, we will have enough money and not to mention, he’s quite medically skilled too!”

Chapter 293

Fiona’s expression turned bitter as she said, “Young Master Michael had mentioned that 50 million is no problem to him and will hold a grand wedding for Selena. He has real money. Jack, on the other hand, he’s poor and yet he likes to boast. You can’t believe anything he says though!”

“However, his wages happen to be real. It was personally promised by Miss Tanya herself. That can’t be fake, right? Look at my leg, it’s actually recovered now, right? I feel like this is a miracle! Even the specialists couldn’t do a thing about it and yet he’s able to heal it!” Andrew was still speaking up for Jack.

“before he received his wages, that money is still not his. Besides, Jack is too used to being on the battlefield and he’s a magnet for trouble so he’s nothing more than a mindless brute. It’s unsure when he’ll cross someone he shouldn’t again and we’ll have to suffer on his behalf. As for your leg, since Jack had spent so much time on the battlefield, obviously he would know how to heal blunt force-related injuries, isn’t that normal? Perhaps he might not even know how to treat a simple common cold!”

Fiona rolled her eyes at Andrew, grabbed those two leather boxes, and walked inside. She said, “We can’t lose these boxes of money. It’s not easy to get them back. Let’s save this money in a different bank tomorrow morning, don’t get spotted by anyone else again!”

The corner of Andrew’s mouth twitched as he watched Fiona leaving. Was his leg’s injury only a minor sprain?

...

At this moment within the hideout of the Dragon God Clan. It was housed within a luxurious mansion. A middle-aged man was sitting there with a few members of the Howard family around him.

“What’s the matter, Father? I heard you’ve dispatched all five of the Five Tigers of our clan. Did something major happen?” A young lady was staring at her father, the legendary Mr. Howard as she asked that question.

“Your brother had an incident. He’s fine, it’s just that he enjoys snatching stuff from people with his motor robbers. He didn’t expect to run into someone exceptionally powerful this time which murdered everyone that was with him. He even called us to have us return the 3.8 million dollars he previously snatched!”

“So, I dispatched all Five Tigers!” The middle-aged man’s expression seemed cold. He looked at the time and said, “The only thing is, based on their skills and how they usually operate, they should be back by now, right?”

“Boss, are all Five Tigers really necessary just to take care of one man? Just randomly pick someone who is quite skilled from our Dragon God Clan. Wouldn’t that do it?” An old man casually said, “It seems someone actually has a deathwish to be bold enough to cross our Dragon God Clan!”

“Finn, a few days ago, we’ve lost more than two hundred men and you were investigating it, so have you found out anything? Now, we can’t be too careless regardless of anything. If someone can kill Scar, they might actually be able to murder the remaining Five Tigers, do you understand?”

Mr. Howard had a serious look on his face. After some thought, he spoke again, “Back then, Eastfield was still quite peaceful. However, the current Eastfield is different. Plenty of veterans have returned and amongst these veterans, there were King of Wars and marshals. Although they act alone, each of them are extremely powerful people. Just previously, there’s a King of War named Xerxes, didn’t he level the entire Xavier family, a second-class aristocratic family even, on a whim?”

As he spoke, Mr. Howard continued, “So, everyone should be a little more careful in doing things next time. Those King of Wars were quite low profile so even if we run into them, we wouldn’t know. Especially when they are all retired from battle, their attacks would be extremely ruthless, not to mention, they’re quite keen on being the hero. Hence, we should act more carefully!”

After Finn heard that, he nodded and said, “Well said, just like the last time when we lost more than two hundred men, plenty of people in Eastfield were all calling the murderers of our men a hero!”

“Don’t you worry, Father, he that dares to assault brother will never have the chance to live to see tomorrow. All Five Tigers had been dispatched over and it’s not like he can fly away, right?” The young lady laughed and spoke confidently.

Chapter 294

However at this very moment, a beautiful woman dressed in a sexy split-end gown while wearing a facemask arrived at the main entrance of the mansion.

Not long after, the man stationed at the entrance rushed in with a swollen and beaten face.

“Boss, boss, not good. A woman in a facemask said she wanted to see you!” The man said after rushing in while lowering his head.

“What happened to your face?” An elderly man asked immediately. This happened to be the residence of the boss of the Dragon God Clan and some elders, could anyone be here to seek trouble?

The man raised his head and said, “The body of this lady is incredible and even more so, she’s sexy too. So, a few of our guards wanted to rip her facemask off to take a look. Unexpectedly, however, this woman is insanely powerful. She defeated us without any effort. She even mentioned if she hadn’t seen you in three minutes, she would destroy our Dragon God Clan!”

“How bold of her!” That elderly man slammed the table after being infuriated. He then stood up immediately with an incredibly bitter look on his face and said, “This happens to be the Dragon God Clan and yet she boasts about destroying it? Who does she think she is?”

“A woman acting so arrogantly?” Mr. Howard’s expression dimmed as he said, “Let her come in then we’ll talk!”

Soon, Lana, who was wearing a facemask due to her fear of being recognized by people, arrived at the mansion’s lobby.

A hundred to two hundred people surrounded her with a serious look on as they stared at her.

Since this woman could so easily defeat more than ten people outside, earlier. Would a woman like this be normal? The most important thing was, none of the Five Tigers were currently present in their headquarters. This could mean trouble for them.

“Who are you? What do you want?” Mr. Howard asked with a frown.

“This lady and her body, why does she look so familiar?” After one of the men gave it some thought, he suddenly seemed to have recalled something as he exclaimed, “I remember, she’s the lady that spent 500 million to buy that luminous pearl at the auction!”

The Dragon God Clan was present at the auction back then. However, they never took part in it and were merely there to spectate. Although there were some wealthy merchants in the Dragon God Clan but they were involved in some underground business.

“You’re that mysterious lady?” Mr. Howard frowned and said, “What are you doing here? We have no business with each other!”

Lana looked at him and said, “Take your men and leave Eastfield. You are given a chance to live!”

Everyone gasped after hearing that. They did not expect that the first thing this woman would say could be something so arrogant by telling them to leave Eastfield!

“Who the hell are you? Do you have a deathwish for telling us to leave Eastfield?”

“You’re not too bad looking. Lady, are you looking for a boy toy, what do you think of me?” A bearded man had long since been attracted to Lana’s body as he could not hold back his teases.

Lana squinted her eyes then suddenly took a step forward and punched directly at the man’s chest. The man immediately flew off from the impact while coughing up blood. He died instantly.

Lana stared at the man coldly before taking her face mask off as she said, “I am only a messenger. Those Five Tigers of yours are already dead now. Oh, that’s right Mr. Howard, your son is also dead. You guys can stop waiting now. Telling you to leave is giving you guys a chance to live or else, everyone in the Dragon God Clan will die!”

Mr. Howard's face turned inhumanly pale after hearing what she said as he took a few steps back from feeling completely terrified. He said, "No! Impossible! How is it possible for the Five Tigers to die? My son, were they unable to save him?"

Chapter 295

"Boss, Mr. Howard, look carefully. Who, who is that?" An elderly man finally recognized Lana. He was so startled by it, even his voice sounded shaky.

The most terrifying part of all was that Lana was merely a messenger. Who exactly could possibly make a God of War send a message on their behalf?

"God-Goddess of War, Lana!" After Mr. Howard took a careful look at the lady, he gasped.

When this majestic Goddess of War arrived at Eastfield, she would have the power to rule over life and death. It was unsure just how many powerhouses wanted to butter up to her. However, he never expected the Goddess of War would arrive at their Dragon God Clan. Based on reasoning, the arrival of the Goddess of War at their Dragon God Clan should be a good thing. Ironically, however, she turned out to be the bringer of their nightmares. He did not hesitate the slightest bit since these were the Goddess of War's own words. Besides, the Goddess of War did not have that much time to make her way over just to provoke him.

Moreover, if their Five Tigers were actually dead, they would really have to leave Eastfield as soon as possible without the need of the Goddess of War to inform them. Or else, their enemies would no doubt show up soon. Without the protection of the Five Tigers, it would be open season for their Dragon God Clan.

"It's, it's really the Goddess of War!"

"Yeah, the Goddess of War made her way here personally and had us leave as soon as possible!"

"Good lord, who exactly did the young master cross? Since the Five Tigers were all murdered.

Fortunately, that person is merciful enough to let us live!”

Everyone was completely terrified as they were all discussing it.

“Strange, since that person was so insanely terrifying, why would that person be willing to let us live? The motor robbers, my son, and even the Five Tigers were all killed, logically that person had no reason to let us go!”

Although this was a hard truth to accept, for the sake of the Howard family, Mr. Howard had no choice but to admit defeat. He knew that his son had crossed someone that was insanely powerful this time.

“He wanted me to tell you that because prior to your son’s death, he stood tall like a man and did not beg for mercy! Hence, he decided to let go of the remaining members of the Dragon God Clan! Leave now, the sooner the better or else, after people from other clans know that the Five Tigers are dead, you guys will have no way of escaping with anything!”

Lana swiftly put on her face mask then strode out of there.

Those people who surrounded her earlier opened up a path for her to leave.

“Hurry up! Pack your things and leave Eastfield as soon as possible. From this day on, our Dragon God Clan will be non-existent in Eastfield! Anyone unwilling to leave, well the Dragon God Clan has been disbanded! You guys can go anywhere you please. Anyone that wishes to come with me, you guys can leave with me!” Mr. Howard left a decisive order.

The corners of his eyes turned red at this moment. However, as a man, even if it was excruciatingly painful, he held back his tears.

“Dad, brother, he...” His only daughter had already dissolved into a puddle of tears as she sobbed.

“Sigh, we have no choice. Truly, we can’t afford to cross him. No! we can’t afford to at all! Letting us live and escape while intentionally bringing us a message is merciful enough!” Mr. Howard sighed and he felt in that instant, he had aged quite a lot.

“Young master is strong, he died like a man. Our lives are saved by him!” An elder on the other hand lamented, “The only thing is, who exactly could make a Goddess of War be his messenger. This is truly terrifying!”

“I didn’t expect our Eastfield would have such truly terrifying hidden forces!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 296-300

Chapter 296

“Good lord, major things had happened! The Dragon God Clan has left Eastfield!”

The incident at the Dragon God Clan was gradually being exposed at four in the afternoon. The corpses of the Five Tigers of the Dragon God Clan and Mr. Howard’s son had soon been found. This terrified some of the powerhouses in Eastfield. That was because everyone was aware that the total number of members in the Dragon God Clan was over a few thousand people. However, it seemed even a powerhouse like that could collapse.

Of course, there were plenty of people who were happy since the Dragon God Clan was so used to committing heinous acts of crime so arrogantly and their acts had long since angered, everyone. As an example, when they started a company, it would be related to the loan shark. This had broken countless families and destroyed countless homes for people. It was truly depressing. Now that the Dragon God Clan was gone, everyone would naturally feel happy.

The remaining clans, on the other hand, they were all on edge. Aside from being completely shocked by it, they were also very terrified by such news. Of course, aside from the dark forces, there were also major families who were operating legally. They were all feeling the tension. They were all thinking who exactly was powerful enough to murder the Five Tigers of the Dragon God Clan.

“Hey, who do you think is powerful enough to completely obliterate the Dragon God Clan?! Moreover, based on an eyewitness of the scene, the attacker’s speed had to be insanely fast so it might have only been done by one or two people. That was no group fight.” Miss Tanya was just about to go shopping and since Jack had just arrived, she brought him along.

Whenever she headed out previously, for her safety’s sake, she preferred to bring along a few bodyguards. However, since Jack’s abilities were so powerful, she felt that bringing only him along would be enough.

“How should I know? Those folks in the Dragon God Clan are not the kindest of folks and they’d made a lot of enemies so being retaliated by someone is well within the realms of expectations!” Jack cracked a calm smile, took out a cigarette, and started smoking slowly.

Miss Tanya stared at Jack before curiously asking, “That’s odd. Your wages are not low anymore and there’s no reason for you to save up so meagerly, right? Why are you still smoking these White-Sand cigarettes? You should be smoking Oriental cigarettes though!”

After Jack heard that, he cracked a bitter chuckle as he got lost in a memory. He said, “You have no idea! This cigarette brand has become a part of my life’s memories!”

“Can, can you share?” Miss Tanya took a glance at Jack. This was her first time to see Jack in such a melancholy mood. It seemed that these White-Sand Cigarettes had quite the backstory.

Jack took a deep puff before saying, “When I first set foot on the battlefield back then, I was really terrified. Back then, I was a non-smoker. Getting a cigarette on the battlefield was a challenge on its own! I have a comrade who absolutely loved smoking and he had also killed a lot of our enemies. He became a hero and had also once saved my life!” As he spoke, Jack lamented, “Unfortunately, on one occasion, he...stayed behind on the battlefield because he wanted to look for his favorite White-Sand cigarettes! As a result, I cradled him in a puddle of blood and he shoved the cigarettes into my hands and told me with a smile. He hoped that I would finish smoking that entire pack of cigarettes or else, his search would be for nothing!”

Jack's eyes gradually turned red as he spoke. He said, "He is a lot older than us and has saved countless soldier's lives. Due to his age and since his last name being Brothers, we all called him Bro. Bro was powerful and we called him the God of Blades since his specialty was the saber. He could kill anyone with a single slash and countless have perished under his blade. I didn't expect it, all for a pack of cigarettes..."

As Miss Tanya looked at Jack's eyes that were gradually turning red, plenty of thoughts raced in her mind. She could feel the pain Jack felt at that moment. That was why Jack refused to change his cigarette brand because he had grown so used to it. Perhaps when he smoked these cigarettes, he could feel Bro by his side.

Chapter 297

The image of his savior lying in his arms manifested in Miss Tanya's mind.

While she was in a trance, she did not realize a few Audis in front of her had suddenly stopped. Miss Tanya was so startled, she frantically stepped on the brakes. However, she still rear-ended one of the Audis.

"Miss Tanya, were you actually distracted from listening to my story?" Jack chuckled bitterly as he looked at the startled Miss Tanya beside him.

"It's your fault for being so emotional in your story. I got distracted when I thought about your Comrade Bro!" Miss Tanya rolled her eyes at Jack before getting out of the car fuming.

Jack looked at the car plate of the car in front of them. It read B77777. It seemed the owner of this car was not as simple as they thought! Since Miss Tanya had only brought him along as her bodyguard, for Miss Tanya's safety, Jack followed behind.

The owner of the car in front of them immediately got out of his car.

"How'd you learn to drive, woman? Godd*mmit, it's a woman, can't you watch the road?" After that

man got out of the car, he started yelling at them.

A lot of people got out of the Audis in front of him. There were approximately more than ten people in total. All of them were wearing a white shirt, black jeans, and brightly shone leather shoes. All of them looked fresh and they were all bodyguards.

A different man who was wearing a pair of shades and a shirt with flower designs on it approached them. He said, "Pfft, what a beauty! She's driving a Ferrari. Not bad, daughter of a wealthy man, right?"

"Sorry, I wasn't paying attention earlier, also the car in front of me braked too early so..." Since it was her fault for causing the fender-bender and although it was not serious, Miss Tanya was quite sincere as she immediately apologized to him.

Of course, that person was not entirely free from blame because Jack noticed earlier that he braked immediately after switching lanes. This made him skeptical if that person was intentionally messing with Miss Tanya after noticing how beautiful Miss Tanya was. Moreover, that man with the flower shirt was the last person to get out of the car.

"this is a fender-bender you know? So, you think the law doesn't apply to you just because you drive a Ferrari? I'm sorry but our family is extremely rich and a car like this, we have a few of them at home!" That man in a flower shirt scanned Miss Tanya before teasingly said, "You're not that old, and your body's not bad. So, how do you plan on paying for the damages?"

"Your car will be quite expensive to fix but in order to show my sincere apologies, I will transfer a hundred thousand dollars to you. So, what do you think?" After some thought, Miss Tanya spoke.

"A hundred thousand dollars? Are you donating to a beggar?" That man actually started laughing unexpectedly as he said that.

Chapter 298

Miss Tanya was speechless. This situation was not serious at all, and 100 thousand dollars should be

enough. She never expected the man to reply the way he did.

Still, she gritted her teeth and suppressed her anger before saying, "500 thousand should be enough, yes? This is nothing more than an R8. Don't take me for a fool who knows nothing about cars."

The man merely chuckled. "You're quite interesting, woman. You actually know cars! It seems you're much better than a lot of the other female drivers."

The man started cackling out loud before continuing, "So you think paying for the damages of my car will be alright for you? You rear-ended my car and startled me. You have to pay for the mental damage I sustained, don't you know? Oh, that's right, the work incapacitation fees as well. My time is incredibly precious, it's worth millions!"

Those bodyguards started laughing after hearing that.

"So, girl, do you think 500 thousand is enough?" The man took a step closer while laughing sinisterly.

"A million, nothing more than that. Give me your account number and I'll transfer it to you." Though seething with anger, Miss Tanya had no intention of arguing with these people. She was seriously suspecting if these people were professional con-artists.

"A million?" She did not expect that the man would laugh again. "How is that enough?" he mocked. "You guys won't be leaving until you give me 100 million!"

Miss Tanya was nervous as she heard that. This was not a con; it was a blatant scam.

"10 billion? You're scamming people, aren't you?" Jack could no longer watch. It seemed that man was bullying Miss Tanya with the greater number of men he had with him. This had gotten rather unreasonable.

“What are you talking about? Judging from your looks, you’re quite handsome. You don’t happen to be this lady’s boyfriend now, are you? Why don’t you pay 100 million for her?” The man laughed. He had a smug look on his face and did not seem to be taking Jack seriously.

Miss Tanya felt bashful as she heard that. “No, he’s not my boyfriend,” she frantically explained, “he’s only my bodyguard!”

“Oh, that means you don’t have a boyfriend yet, right? Well, isn’t that something,” he snickered. “Since you don’t have a boyfriend, why don’t you date me then?” The man grinned as he continued to speak to Miss Tanya.

“Do you know who she is? You’re even spouting nonsense about wanting to be her boyfriend.” Jack chuckled as he reminded him. The man was too oblivious to know who Miss Tanya really was.

Of course, it would be quite normal for the man to not know about Miss Tanya as the number plates from these cars showed they were from out of state and not locally from Eastfield. It was unsure if they came over to visit their relatives or for a vacation.

“I don’t care who she is. It has nothing to do with a trashy bodyguard like you, right? Besides, she only came out with a single bodyguard. It seems to me that her family background is quite average, so to speak! Don’t just judge by the expensive cars she’s driving. Average families would only drive these sports cars out to show. Judge for yourself to see who would casually travel with ten to twenty bodyguards, okay? Going out like this exemplifies a true wealthy person’s image!” The man dressed in a flower shirt grew more excited as he spoke to Miss Tanya, “Lady, you won’t be able to afford the 100 million pay, right? If you can’t, we can talk about payment with a different method!”

Miss Tanya gritted her teeth as she was boiling with anger. “Pardon, but I can afford 100 million. However, I won’t spare a single penny on the likes of you!”

After her burst of anger, Miss Tanya immediately turned around to get into her car. "Let's go, Jack," she called out, "let's not bother with these trash bags. A bunch of scumbags they are! They wanted so much more after we showed them respect!"

Miss Tanya had always done things in a very arrogant way. Since she was the one at fault, she apologized to that person and intended to pay up the losses. She never expected that person to be so unreasonable. She was so infuriated.

"Want to leave? Can't let you go that easily now, right?" The man chuckled and immediately waved his hand. This signaled all of his underlings to rush over and immediately surrounded both Jack and Miss Tanya.

"What exactly do you want? You'd be dreaming if I'd ever become your girlfriend, do you understand? Day-dream. It'll never happen in this lifetime!" Miss Tanya was fuming. She had never once been bullied even when she was a child.

The man sleazily chuckled. "Let's make it simple then: let me kiss you once. That should be fine, right? Since you don't have a boyfriend and that might be your first kiss, your kiss can be a way of repaying for the damages! Think about it; your single kiss is worth 100 million dollars. Aren't you a little excited about that?" That man was chuckling sinisterly and did not seem to take Miss Tanya seriously.

"Miss Tanya, seems to me that these people want to do this the hard way!" Jack noticed the man's arrogance. The jerk had the gall to force a kiss on Miss Tanya. He massaged his fists as he spoke with a smile.

"Alright, beat them up good for me! Have them all lie flat on the ground!" Tanya was breathing heavily from being so agitated. Although they had the numbers, she was confident in Jack's skills. He should be able to pull it off.

Besides, if Harvey was here, he would have no problem taking care of ten to twenty people, not to mention that Jack was a lot stronger than Harvey.

“You think my bodyguards are all pushovers? You’re telling me more than 10 men can’t defeat one person?” the man spoke mockingly. “Oh, I understand now. Are you trying to tell me that your family is also very wealthy and has hired a lot of bodyguards and you think by bringing along one or two powerful ones would be enough? Lady, I know there are plenty of wealthy people, or should I say, wealthy merchants who’d also hire bodyguards if their families are wealthy too! However, the wages to hire bodyguards aren’t cheap. Therefore, in order to save money, they wouldn’t hire too many bodyguards! I think that’s your situation, right?” The man cackled out loud as though he had figured out everything.

He then waved his hand and said, “Capture that woman for me. I want to kiss her to my heart’s content as reimbursement for the damages on my car!”

In just a few flashy moments, Jack got some of his bodyguards lying on the ground as they cried out in agony.

“You bunch of useless trash bags. How can you guys not even withstand a single punch?” That man in a flower shirt was incredibly furious as he noticed his men on the ground.

As he spoke, another group of people began to drop like flies, hurt to the point they could not even fight. They were all knocked out by Jack and could not even help themselves up.

“Good...good lord!” That man in the flower shirt was incredibly terrified as he immediately dashed back to his car and swiftly drove off. He was not even concerned with the conditions of his underlings.

Chapter 300

“That coward sure can run!” Jack let out a bitter chuckle as he stared at the leaving car.

“You, sir, are insane! If Harvey was in your position, he wouldn’t be able to solve the whole ordeal as quickly as you even if he’s skilled in combat!” After Tanya vented her pent-up frustrations, she instantly felt a lot better.

Jack chuckled heartily. “Can I not be insane for getting paid so much?” He then opened her car door and

said, "Come, Miss Tanya, let's continue shopping. Don't be affected by a bunch of trash bags!"

Both of them left soon after and went shopping.

That young master dressed in a flower shirt soon made his way over to Ken's house.

"You have to help me, cousin!" The man with the flower shirt cried and complained the moment he noticed Ken. "Look, I'm here for a fun vacation in your Eastfield, but I didn't expect to be bullied before I even step foot in your house!" he grumbled.

Ken was already frustrated as he thought of ways he could get Selena. Now that he noticed Flynn's presence here, he was quite impatient as he spoke, "What's the matter? Who dares to bully you anyway? Weren't you nicknamed Tiny Tyrant in your city? Your Bane family is still a second-class aristocratic family in Lone City, so how can someone be bold enough to bully you?"

Lone City was a huge city much larger than Eastfield. There were also more powerhouses in Lone City as compared to Eastfield. The first-class aristocratic families in Lone City had more power and were significantly stronger than the ones here.

Of course, the second-class aristocratic families in Lone City were only a tiny bit more powerful than the ones here. However, they were still incomparable to a first-class aristocratic family local to Eastfield.

"Some blind lady rear-ended my car. Not only did she refuse to repay the damages, but she even had her bodyguard hit me! Say, isn't this infuriating or what? Thankfully this isn't Lone City, or I'd have her pay up nonetheless!" Relaying his side of the story, he then whined, "Cousin, I'm here to have fun with you but I had an incident in your city, so you have to stand up for me!"

"So she knows to bring her bodyguard along and you don't? No way, right? I remembered you enjoy going out with your bodyguard, right? Why didn't you go out with yours today?" Ken felt puzzled as he frowned.

"I did; brought more than ten even. Who knew those useless trash bags I brought can't even defeat one guy! It seems that her bodyguard should be the more powerful one among the bodyguards!" After Young Master Flynn finished speaking, he looked at the front door and said, "Look, those bodyguards of mine haven't even arrived here yet. They can't even stand back up after a punch. Truly humiliating."

Young Master Flynn was clueless to how bad the injuries were for his bodyguards. They were all currently hospitalized and it would take them a month or two to recover.

"She wouldn't be that unreasonable, right? She rear-ended you and was able to afford a bodyguard, so it would be unlikely that she can't afford to pay you back, right? Also, your car isn't too expensive today, right?"

Ken was no fool and he was aware of what kind of a person his cousin was. He said, "Speak now: what exactly happened? You wouldn't be drooling over that person's looks to have caused the current situation you're in now... Right?"

Young Master Flynn chuckled bashfully and said, "Cousin, let me tell you just how amazing this woman looked. Moreover, there's this elegance from her body and she doesn't seem too old. As for her body, though... Oh boy, what a body. A simple twitch from her was exceedingly charming and adorable."

As he spoke, Young Master Flynn had almost ran out of drool to spill as he continued, "The truth is that I was just toying with her and told her to be my girlfriend, but not only did she blatantly rejected me, but she even told me that I'm daydreaming!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 301-305

Chapter 301

"So?" Ken let out a bitter laugh before probing further.

Flynn cracked an awkward laugh before continuing, "So, I told my bodyguards to capture the lady so I could kiss her as a form of payment. I feel like this isn't much of a big deal. However, I didn't expect her bodyguard would be that powerful, and it took him no effort to take care of mine."

“Who’s that lady anyway? Do you know her name?” After some thought, Ken asked.

Since his cousin was having a vacation and something happened to him in this city, he feared that his cousin’s parents would be upset if he did nothing for him.

“Well, I don’t know. I didn’t ask!” Young Master Flynn cracked a bitter laugh.

“Then how can I stand up for you?” Ken glared at him. “I’ve no idea who that person is, and even if I bring my men over now, I’m pretty sure they’re gone. Do you think they’ll still be waiting for you there? Just think of it as having bad luck. It’ll be much better to think about how to deal with them if you meet again next time!”

“Alright then. I’ll save it for the next time we meet, since the faces of both the bodyguard and the lady were seared in my memories anyway. Best they hope to never run into them next time, or I’ll have them know that I—Flynn Bane—isn’t one they can simply mess with!” Young Master Flynn clenched his fist and swore furiously.

After accompanying Miss Tanya to shop for three to four hours, Jack noticed it was still early, so he was ready to take a good break in the room the Drake family arranged for him. The room Miss Tanya arranged for him was a room on the second floor in a mansion.

Miss Tanya’s cousin, Yvonne used to live in this mansion. Yvonne lost her parents at a very young age, hence she was raised by Old Master Drake. This woman enjoyed having vacations and loved to travel to all sorts of places and gamble, thus she rarely returned to live here. The room Miss Tanya arranged for him was right next to hers.

Although the Drake family had accommodation arranged for Jack, Jack did not live here in recent days. He would return home every day to keep his wife and daughter company. This was the most blessed thing he could do in the entire world.

After lunch, he would come upstairs to take a nap whenever Jack had nothing to do. When Jack was about to enter his room, he could hear sounds of flowing water coming from the washroom at the end of the hallway.

He frowned. "That's odd. I turned the tap off when I washed my hands earlier. Could I have forgotten to turn it off? A faulty tap, maybe?"

As Jack thought about it, he went to the washroom at the end of the hallway to investigate. He noticed the door was not shut properly and that there was a huge opening. Jack was certain that no one was living here, so it should either be a faulty tap or he had forgotten to turn it off.

However, as he was about to open the door, the sound of flowing water stopped and the washroom door swung open while a woman walked out. Jack was stunned at what he saw as this woman had just finished showering and was actually...

Chapter 302

The last thing Jack expected was a naked woman without a towel wrapped around her. She was merely drying her wet hair with a towel before walking out. She was momentarily stunned when she saw him at first.

"Ah! Creep!" she yelled from the top of her lungs.

She saw Jack turned his back to her, and she seized the chance to bolt into her room and locked it shut.

"It seems Miss Tanya's cousin, Yvonne is back!" Jack chuckled helplessly; he did not expect to see her bare like that.

He had to admit Yvonne had a stunning figure. Seemingly two to three years older than Tanya, she looked a lot more mature unlike the princess-like Tanya.

Jack decided to return to his room, grimacing due to the sheer embarrassment. It was unsure if that woman would mind or not. This never happened to Jack before. Fearless was he when braved through innumerable enemies on the battlefield, but this? He had no idea how to even start damage control.

After a moment, Yvonne stormed out furiously. She changed into a long white dress and went straight to Jack's room while furiously staring at Jack. If a single gaze could murder, it seemed Jack would have died more than a thousand times over.

She held a pair of scissors before pointing it at Jack and barked, "Who the hell are you, creep? How did you appear in the Drake family's household? If you don't come clean, I—I'll kill you!"

"I'm a bodyguard here, and this room was arranged for me by Miss Tanya. She said I could rest in this room whenever I feel tired and that I can also live here!" Jack explained after letting out a helpless chuckle.

"Bodyguard?" She looked at Jack suspiciously before looking at his bed.

She soon realized the covers on Jack's bed were stacked neatly; every corner was perfectly aligned. It was better aligned than stacks of dried tofu. This was not something a normal person could do.

After a moment of deliberate thinking, Yvonne asked, "You were a soldier?" After all, only returning veterans could keep such a habit.

"Yeah!" Jack nodded.

"Being a bodyguard after being discharged is normal. It seems you're not lying to me after all." Yvonne stared at the man. She initially was furious at him, but as she thought of this man risking his life on the battlefield and fending off the enemy, she calmed down. A person like this might not be a creep. However, when she thought about how she was never once seen by any men the way he did, she felt displeased and humiliated to the greatest extent.

“Yeah, I didn’t lie to you! I don’t like lying to people!” Jack let out an awkward laugh. The event that happened just a while ago made him bashful.

“Then tell me honestly: Have you seen everything earlier?” Yvonne asked as she gritted her teeth.

“Yeah, all of it!” Jack felt awkward.

“You...you b*stard. You should be saying no; that you’ve seen nothing at this moment!” Yvonne stomped her feet furiously, angered at his all-too blunt confession.

“I told you that I don’t like lying to people. Besides, you told me to be honest!”

Chapter 303

Jack laughed awkwardly before adding, “However, I realized a problem when I saw you earlier!”

“What problem did you find, creep?!” Yvonne felt like she could pass out from sheer anger. Was this jerk going to point out any flaws on her body? She was not that shabby; not too fat nor too skinny.

“Yes, there is a problem...” After some thought, Jack nodded.

“Ahh! I’ll kill you!” Yvonne could no longer hold herself back. Had this jerk said he did not see anything, she would have pretended nothing had happened since she assumed he knew to pretend and carry on. She did not expect him to be far too honest. He was blunter than a metal rod!

All of a sudden, she lunged at him with scissors at hand. In her mind, killing him would be like getting rid of a no-name bodyguard, and her family—even her cousin—would not say anything about it.

Alas, how could a weak and frail woman be a match for Jack? For his sake, Jack stood up immediately

and instantly grabbed both of her arms. With a light squeeze, the scissors in Yvonne's hand fell to the ground.

"Ah!" Yvonne whimpered in pain. In her pain, she lost her balance with her slippers on, and she fell onto Jack. The force made them stumble together and landed on the bed.

"You... You creep!" Yvonne could not believe she was on a stranger's bed with this creep. Her cheeks were completely flushed, and she felt completely speechless.

"Lady, you have to understand that it was you who charged at me. I was merely defending myself, okay? I didn't expect you to slip!"

This unreasonable young lady was making him feel awkward. His wife was much better and would never behave like this woman who twisted facts.

"Besides, who wouldn't bring a change of clothes and walk back to their rooms right after their bath? Also, I wasn't the one who opened the door in the first place. You walked out on your own. You can't blame me for this, right?"

"Ah!" Yvonne was pushed to her limit. This jerk dared to bring that up! "How should I know that anyone would be here?" she argued. "I was living alone here even back then, and even the maids won't ever come upstairs!"

Yvonne was going up the wall. Was today a cumulation of eight lifetime's worth of bad luck? She immediately flipped over and straddled on Jack's body. She wanted to strangle this jerk to death. However, both of her hands were caught by Jack. She could not break free from his grip.

"Damn, Cousin... You're progressing a little too fast, don't you think?" The last thing Yvonne expected was her cousin at the door. Both Jack and Yvonne were petrified at that moment.

Jack looked at Yvonne on top of him while Yvonne stared at Jack underneath her. Their faces turned red instantly.

“Hurry up and release me!” She roared before coming down from Jack’s body, her face searing red. All she wanted to do earlier was strangle Jack to death, nothing else. However, that position she was in would make anyone cough up blood.

“You’ve misunderstood, Miss Tanya, nothing was going between us. We’re just, well, wrestling!” Jack frantically sat up and fixed his clothes.

“Don’t misunderstand us, Cousin. It’s not what you think!” Yvonne felt embarrassed.

“I know... You guys fell in love at first sight, right?” Tanya chuckled playfully and added, “I didn’t expect you to be so dominant, Cousin. Still, you’re both careless while doing things like that. You guys should close the door. It’ll be embarrassing if anyone had seen you guys!”

Yvonne was speechless. She was doomed since ‘I knew what you did’ were written all over Tanya’s face. Judging from her looks, pleading and proving her innocence would no longer work.

Chapter 304

“Shut your own damn door! What nonsense are you spouting about, Tanya? Am I that kind of person?” Yvonne was going crazy from being so infuriated. “It doesn’t matter how handsome he is,” she countered vehemently, “I won’t just sleep with him when we had just met. I’m not an obsessive lover!”

“I don’t buy it. I trust what I see, and I saw you were literally on top of him. That can’t be fake now, right?” Tanya giggled and added, “Oh, Cousin, you must be cursing about how I entered in such a wrong moment, and if only I came a little later.”

“Miss Tanya, you misunderstood us, really. Nothing happened between us, and you already know that I have a wife!” Jack helplessly explained. He thought that Yvonne might have a mental breakdown if he did not resolve the misunderstanding.

“Yes, yes, yes! How can I possibly like him? I don’t even know his name!” Yvonne let out a sigh of relief and it seemed Jack was nice enough to help her explain.

“Do you even require to know that person’s name when you love someone? What if you choose to elope with him, Cousin? I can’t do what you did earlier! That was too bold!” Tanya continued to tease her as she commented, “Had I came in a little later than this, I’m guessing you might even be pregnant, no?”

“Tanya Drake, I’ll strangle you!” Yvonne was completely flustered and was beyond speechless.

“Alright, alright, Yvonne. Tell me then: Why are you in that position if you’re not making babies with him?” Tanya joked in between laughter.

“I was just trying to strangle him. Strangle him to death!” Yvonne immediately glared at Jack furiously.

“Why? You guys had just met, and you’re treating him like this? It shouldn’t warrant such a response, right?” Tanya had a puzzled look on her face.

“You see, this creep...” Yvonne wanted to explain everything but found herself tongue-tied.

Would she want to tell Tanya about how that man saw everything the moment she finished showering? How embarrassing it would be for her if Tanya knew about it?

“Because what exactly?” Tanya was even more confused when Yvonne stopped in her sentence. It was uncertain what exactly had happened between these two.

After some thought, Yvonne explained, “Nothing. I’m just saying, how can this man live here when I’m also living on the upper floor? He can’t live here. What if this man turned out to be a creep, and what

should I do if he barged in my room in the middle of the night?"

A thought then occurred to her and she barked at her cousin, "Tanya, how can you assign a bodyguard to live in this mansion? Not to mention, a room opposite mine, damn it!"

Tanya sighed. "Dear Cousin, this was arranged by my father. I had no say in the matter!"

"Besides, you have no idea how powerful Jack is. Living right next to you gives you a sense of security, you know? Also, he's extremely capable of fighting! I was out shopping today and was bullied by people since I only brought Jack out with me. He single-handedly took care of that man's bodyguards!" Tanya explained.

"Okay, fine, he's powerful. Still, he's a man and he's living right across my room. Is this appropriate? What if lust begets him someday? Wouldn't I be..."

Chapter 305

Yvonne did not like Jack living here since she hated seeing that man.

What Jack spoke next took her aback: "Don't you worry; I'm not interested in you. Besides, my wife looks ten times more beautiful than you, so do you think I'll try anything? Would I, a veteran, do something as scummy as assaulting a woman?"

"You!" That remark infuriated Yvonne. Not only had this jerk seen everything, but he also implied she looked shabby and was not as beautiful as his wife.

Who would not take a few more looks at her whenever she was out shopping? He should know that. Yvonne was extremely confident in her own appearance since those long legs of hers were rather beautiful.

“Is she now? I’m quite curious to know who your wife is. If there’s a chance in the future, I want to see for myself just how beautiful she truly is to be ten times more beautiful than me!” Yvonne spoke, her arms crossed at her chest. This jerk was obviously boasting. How could a bodyguard marry someone more beautiful than her?

Jack chuckled at her statement. “We’ll see if there’s a chance!”

Checking the time, he then said, “It’s getting late now, it’s already 5 P.M. I’ll be heading home now. I originally intended to take a break for a moment but was startled by this wild woman, so I didn’t get to nap.” After he was done speaking, he headed right out the door and swiftly went downstairs.

Befuddled, Yvonne looked at her watch on her wrist. “Isn’t...isn’t it only 4.30 P.M.?” she pointed out. “How can he get off work just like that? Moreover, shouldn’t he let his captain know and ask if he agrees to it or not? How is this a bodyguard? He’s living like a young master now!”

Yvonne scoffed. “Fire him. A bodyguard like this has to be fired. Tanya, you have to fire him!”

Without much to console her cousin, Tanya spoke with a smile, “Yvonne, your hair isn’t even dried yet. You just finished your bath, right? Don’t get so worked up. Your refusal to meet him wouldn’t happen to be due to him walking in while you were showering, now would it?”

Yvonne blushed heavily after hearing that statement. “Impossible,” she denied vehemently. “Tanya, don’t you spout nonsense like these, you got that? I’ll get mad if you keep making baseless statements!”

“What are you so nervous about? I was just joking with you. Also, I trust that you’ve locked the door as you bathed. He couldn’t have walked in on you, no?” Tanya laughed and added, “He’s no ordinary bodyguard, you know. His combat skills are incredibly powerful, and not even Harvey is a match for him. More importantly, we suspect that he shares a very close bond with the God of War!”

“God of War!” Yvonne gasped the instant she heard her cousin mentioned the God of War. “Are you talking about the Goddess of War, Lana?” she sputtered.

“Yes, her!” Tanya nodded as she spoke.

“Is it now? How can a veteran share any form of relationship with the God of War? Besides, if that was the case, why would he even work as a bodyguard anyway? Someone of such high status wouldn’t be a bodyguard, right?” Yvonne was still slightly skeptical about that creep having any form of relationship with the God of War.

“Let me explain,” Tanya started. “Back then when the God of War was returning, my father took a lot of effort to learn which private jet she was on to pick her up. He did not expect that Jack would disembark the jet with the God of War...”

Tanya then continued, “So, we thought that even if that person isn’t a God of War, at the very least he shares quite the unique bond with the god. My father stated that pleasing him would be the same as pleasing the God of War. Hence, him working here with us is a good thing.”

“A monthly wage of 20 million is a little too much now, is it?” Yvonne pouted her lips as she said that.

“It’s not much. My father even said that he’s only working here because he was in a good mood. This price was actually quite low!” Tanya chuckled and beamed, “I trust my father’s judgment as well!”

Out of the blue, a servant from downstairs called out to Tanya. “Not good, Miss Tanya. A fight is about to break out!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 306-310

Chapter 306

“A fight?” The moment they heard that, both Tanya and Yvonne stared at each other before they rushed downstairs.

The moment they just got out of the main entrance, they could see a muscular man glaring at Jack.

“It’s the head commander, Kyle Jones!”

“This man revels in fighting people, and the moment he learns about a slightly more powerful man entering the Drake family, he’d want to spar with him. Otherwise, he’d constantly bug him!”

Tanya felt all too helpless when she noticed the head commander, Kyle.

Jack was a person the Drake family considered and treated special, but they could not be too obvious about it. Would Kyle hurt Jack? If he did, it would be bad.

Of course, the thing about ‘pleasing Jack’ must be kept private at all times, only known among family members.

“Alright, Kyle. I heard he happens to be really powerful. You can go crazy on him!” Yvonne said as her eyes lit up as excitement overwhelmed her. In a sparring match between two powerful people, a tap would signal the end of the match. However, there was a saying about fists being blind and some people would get hurt if both of them fought. It would naturally make Yvonne very happy to watch Jack getting beaten up.

“What on Earth are you talking about, Cousin?” Tanya rolled her eyes at Yvonne. Turning to Kyle, she spoke, “Kyle, he’s already off work, so don’t cause any trouble to him. Just let him get off work. He’s also a bodyguard to the Drake family, so there’s no need to spar as you please!”

“Miss Tanya, you know me. Whenever I meet a powerful person, I’d feel the need to compete. Otherwise, I wouldn’t be able to sleep. I heard this guy defeated Harvey, so I want to give it a shot to see who’s stronger between us!”

As Kyle stared at Jack, flames of battle could be seen burning bright in his eyes. He seemed slightly

excited.

“So, you’re Kyle.” Jack had a calm look on his face as he continued, “I heard about you two days ago, and you truly are quite the maniac. You’d fight anyone you see. If my guess is right, you might be no match to the Drake family’s Three Major Guardians!”

The moment Kyle heard that, the corners of his mouth twitched. “Yes, I’m no match for them,” he admitted. “I know they’re powerful, but I’ve challenged them before and I’ve lost satisfyingly!”

Pausing for a moment, Kyle continued, “However, I haven’t challenged you yet, so I want to get this over with to see who’s more powerful!”

“I’m already a retired veteran, and I don’t like killing!” Jack stretched and gestured to him with his finger before saying, “However, you’re in my way of me going home. You’re wasting my time, and this annoys me. Moreover, if I don’t fight a person like you, you’d cling to me like brown sugar. Therefore, I can only agree to your challenge!”

“Alright. Since you’ve agreed, don’t mind if I do!” Kyle cackled. With a stomp of his feet, he lunged directly at Jack.

He clenched his sandbag-sized fist and charged straight for Jack. It was releasing a very terrifying shockwave around his fist. The attack was terrifying.

He learned about Jack in the last two days. This guy did not even need to clock in or out from work and could come and go from the Drake family mansion whenever he pleased. This was extremely disrespectful to him as the head commander, thus he needed to teach this guy a lesson. Of course, it did not matter if that was the case or not. He would still seek Jack out to spar in order to compare their power levels. Nonetheless, he was ready to beat Jack to a pulp due to the sheer disrespect.

When Jack noticed his attack was coming straight at him, not only did he not get out of the way or anchor down his feet, but his fist met square with Kyle’s punch, and it caused Kyle to recoil out of the

way.

A deafening sound of impact could be heard when both fists clashed. Next thing anyone knew, Kyle was immediately shot back before stumbling seven to eight steps backward. He planted his feet firmly on the ground to keep his balance.

“No way!”

Chapter 307

Yvonne was shocked and disappointed when she realized he was no match for Jack. She thought Kyle could beat some respect into that jerk, but who knew...

“You lost.” Letting out a satisfied chuckle, Jack said, “If you know what’s best for you, get out of my way. I need to hurry home!”

Kyle was beyond surprised; this guy’s strength was inhuman. Not only was he stronger than him, but he was also incredibly fast! He could feel how terrifyingly fast Jack was when he unleashed his attack. Nonetheless, Jack disrespected him by claiming he had lost when he had the lower hand earlier.

“You’re too cocky!” With his roar of dissatisfaction, he then stomped on the ground again before he leaped. He clasped his hands together, forming a tight huge fist before lunging down on Jack.

When Jack looked up, both of Kyle’s fists were balled together like a hammer that was about to smash his head in.

“You look like a leaping toad!” Jack could not hold back his laughter when he noticed what Kyle looked like. Then, with a single stomp of his foot, he jumped up and somehow disappeared in thin air. Swiftly, both of Jack’s feet landed on Kyle’s back as he stepped on him.

Kyle was completely caught off guard from being stepped on by Jack before violently crashing onto the ground. It hurt him so much, he felt like all four limbs were about to be shattered.

“Do you yield?” Jack chuckled calmly before asking, “If I really wanted to fight you, you would’ve been dead a hundred times over! But I got to give it to you: Your combat skills are a tiny bit better than Harvey’s!”

“Yield! I yield!” How could he not yield when someone was on his back? He could not even compete with Jack’s speed, so how could he even fight?

Now, Kyle was not even questioning Jack’s statement. If Jack wanted to hit him, he would not be able to fight back.

Tanya was once again startled by how easily Jack took down Kyle. It seemed not even the Three Major Guardians hidden in their Drake family would be able to pull that off. His combat abilities would absolutely not be a mere soldier on the battlefield. He would at least be a marshal or a King of War! It seemed that her father’s prediction was true.

Jack chuckled and went straight to the main exit without looking back. He then approached his Porsche and after some thought called out to Tanya, “Miss Tanya, if anyone asks about my Porsche, you can tell them it’s a gift from your Drake family, then I’ll say I bought it myself!” After Jack was done speaking, he drove off immediately.

“What...what’s the meaning of this? He wanted you to say that the car he bought for himself was a gift from you guys, then mention about him buying it himself?”

Hearing what Jack had to say nearly made Yvonne pass out in confusion. This man was truly a weirdo. “That brat!”

Miss Tanya let out a bitter chuckle before explaining, “This man didn’t want anyone to know that he’s rich. That’s why he wanted me to say that I gifted it to him.”

“Then why would he still want to claim that he bought it himself?” Yvonne was still confused.

“His mother-in-law is quite prideful in nature. I’m guessing it was his mother-in-law who wanted him to tell everyone that!” Tanya merely scoffed and added, “If you spend more time with him, you’d find him quite interesting!”

“I don’t want to spend more time with him!” Yvonne was bashful as she had been utterly embarrassed in their first meeting. If they had met a few more times, it was unsure just what kind of scary things would have happened.

Chapter 308

Jack had long since arrived home. After parking his car at a nearby empty spot, he walked in. What he never expected was hearing the voices of both Ken and Neil coming from the inside as he approached the door.

“Auntie,” Ken started, a smile on his face as he spoke, “you know that my relationship with Selena had always been good, so everything I do is for Selena’s sake!”

As he spoke, he immediately said, “Look, these pictures can’t be a mistake. This woman has to be wealthy and is insanely rich. That luminous pearl, well, she won the auction with 500 million dollars! Jack has to be a sugarbaby for being with this wealthy woman!”

The corners of Jack’s mouth twitched as he listened by the door. This was something Micheal told Fiona back then, and both Fiona and Selena were enraged with this. He faithfully explained to them that the person was actually the Goddess of War and was his friend. To his dismay, Fiona and Selena did not believe him. Even after he told Selena that the God of War was his disciple, she was still unconvinced.

Fortunately on that night, although he had crossed Neil, the master of the Hugo family brought Neil over to apologize. The incident went by just like that. Selena even agreed to give him one last chance; he had to fulfill everything he had promised on her grandfather’s 70th birthday. Otherwise, she would not

believe his nonsense and would also divorce him. That storm seemed to have already passed.

He never expected that both b*stards, Ken and Neil would actually show up and bring that matter up to Fiona while he was at work. Fortunately, he got off work early and was not restricted by normal work hours. He was able to eavesdrop in their conversation.

At this moment, Fiona spoke, "The truth is, Young Master Michael had also come over to inform me about it back then and had also shown me the pictures, but Jack just wouldn't admit. What choice do I have? Besides, this picture can't prove much. Unless... You guys can show me an even more intimate picture."

"This picture doesn't prove much?" Neil's expressions dimmed as he asserted, "Auntie, just look at this lady. Look at how sultry this lady looks, and although her face isn't exposed, she's no doubt a beauty. She is rich and beautiful, and this happened during work hours. Do you think it's normal for Jack to be with her?"

Fiona let out a helpless laugh and said, "It's not normal, but what choice do we have when Jack just wouldn't admit that he's a sugarbaby. Besides, he said that this person is the Goddess of War and that they're friends. We don't believe him, but he was so adamant about it!"

"Goddess of War!" Both Ken and Hugo stared at each other, wondering if they had misheard that. When they looked up pictures related to the Goddess of War online, she was quite manly and intimidating to people.

That woman during that day was dressed in a sexy skirt while exposing her thighs. Those were two very different styles. That Goddess of War actually had a feminine side? When they thought about the Goddess of War's body, they gulped. If that was actually the Goddess of War, she would be quite alluring with the way she dressed.

"He's only been a soldier for five years. How could he possibly know a person like the God of War? He's blatantly boasting!"

“Selena actually believed a lie like this?” Ken immediately asked.

“Of course my daughter wouldn’t. She even wanted to kick Jack out that night!”

“Nonetheless, didn’t your father bring you here to apologize, Young Master Neil? He even gave us 300 thousand dollars. I took the money while Jack was allowed to stay that night.”

“Perhaps it was for the child and due to the picture being insufficient to prove much, so Selena gave him one final chance! If Jack can’t fulfill his promises, Selena will kick him out!” Fiona explained the situation.

Chapter 309

Both Ken and Neil looked as though a lightbulb lit up in their eyes.

“What chance?” they asked simultaneously.

“Jack had promised me to give me 20 million dollars during the old master’s birthday. Also, since he had beaten Ivan up, he needs to pay him 10 million dollars in addition to giving our old master a gift worth more than 10 million!” Fiona tittered. “So, that’s the whole situation.”

“Really? Splendid. He will no doubt fail to pull that off. Then, Selena will kick him out. That’s truly amazing!”

“Yeah. There are about 20 days left until the old master’s birthday, and our Hugo family will be present. I’m interested to see how Jack is going to embarrass himself!”

Both young masters looked very delighted. They finally caught a glimpse of hope.

Jack was lucky back then. He was not beaten to death by O’Neal and instead, luck was on his side! They

did not expect to find a silver lining in their cloud.

“I genuinely think Jack might actually pull this off, though.” Fiona said with a bitter laugh while she looked at them both. “Isn’t he making 20 million dollars a month now? He said that he’s close with Miss Tanya, and he’ll request for an advance payment of two months. That would be enough! Judging from his looks, he didn’t seem to be lying!”

Upon hearing that, both young masters were infuriated. They had gotten a taste of what it felt like as one fell into hell from heaven in an instant.

“A gift that is worth over ten million is quite rare. Is he ready with that gift?” Neil said after some thought.

“Him? How does he have any money now, anyway? Hmm, we’ll see then!” Fiona spoke with a laugh.

At this moment, Ken gritted his teeth and took out a packet with an unfamiliar substance. Handing it over to Fiona, he said, “Auntie, you’re also hoping for your daughter to marry someone capable, right? You don’t wish to suffer like this for the rest of your life, yes? Dissolve this in water or any drink and have Jack drink it. Everything will be better when he’s dead.”

“Poison?” Fiona gasped when she heard that, and even her expression changed. “No way, no,” she rejected it vehemently. “Although I don’t like Jack and he caused us so much suffering, I can’t do anything like this. This is way too sinful.”

It seemed both Ken and Neil came prepared. They stared at each other before taking out a card and placed it in front of Fiona.

“Money?” Fiona frowned when she saw the card.

Ken chuckled triumphantly. “There’s 100 million in it. A whole 100 million in it! If you’d help us out,

you'll guarantee Selena's happiness and secure a happy life with all this money! Isn't that a good thing?"

"100 million!" Fiona gasped, an audible gulp followed suit.

Chapter 310

Fiona's eyes widened into saucers when she heard the card had 100 million in it; it seemed as though her eyes would fall on the ground. Even her breathing labored. This was 100 million. To the Taylor family, this was still a lot of money. If this money was only hers to spend, she would not have to worry about for her entire lifetime. Her family would live a wonderful life, and it would not matter if they return to the Taylor family or not.

Both Ken and Neil were delighted at Fiona's reaction. This meant they would not have to do anything to kick Jack out of the picture. Besides, if Selena herself was to request a divorce, Jack would have no choice but to obey despite his brazen nature.

They did not expect that method would be ineffective since they would still have to wait for 20 more days. Moreover, after listening to what Fiona said, Jack might actually be able to fork out 40 million on that day. Their initial plan: ruined.

Therefore, they had to move on to their second plan. Since Fiona absolutely adored money and not a single person would say no to money, as long as she agreed to work with them—to poison Jack—they would succeed half-way through.

They were worried Fiona might think the money was too little, so they both gritted their teeth and each forked out 50 million to make that 100 million dollars bribe.

"So what do you think? It's 100 million, Auntie. For your happiness and for Selena's sake to marry someone decent, you'll have 100 million after you make Jack drink this!" Ken immediately started sweet-talking to her.

"Yeah. You can get a new house, or you can demolish yours and rebuild a much bigger mansion on top

of it. With money, your son would live a much better life! As for your daughter's hand in marriage, it doesn't matter if she marries me or Young Master Ken. It'll be a lot better than marrying a retired veteran, right?"

Neil began persuading her as well. He coaxed her as he repeated, "There's 100 million in this!"

"Right, right, right! A hundred million. One, hundred, million!"

"The pin is six zeros. Auntie, I believe in you!" Both of them spoke in unison.

Fiona's heart was moved. She desperately wanted this much money. However, after some thought, she forcibly handed the card back to them with a sigh. "Just forget about it."

"Why? Auntie, this happens to be 100 million. Do you not like money?"

"Yeah, Auntie. Think about your family and the good days they could be living in the future. Not to mention, isn't the five years of suffering you guys endured caused by Jack?"

Fiona actually turned them down when they were so close to succeeding. This made both Young Master Ken and Neil speechless.

Fiona inhaled sharply. "If this is something else, I would, but this....well... I can't do it! Besides, he's a living, breathing human. How can I murder a human? Moreover, Kylie is such an obedient child, so how can I treat her father like this? I can't allow Kylie to live without a father!"

Fiona sighed and said, "Although Jack has no money and is a little poor, he's not a bad person. It's only 100 million anyway, and as long as he does his job properly, we'll have this money as well!"

Fiona chuckled bitterly as she added, "I acknowledge your good wills, both of you young masters, but

letting me murder someone for money is something I can't do. Not to mention, Jack fended off enemies on the frontlines. Without him, we would've lost. Do you think we'd have a peaceful life right now if he hadn't?"

Both of them were speechless after Fiona's statement. This method was indeed a little underhanded, but Jack could really fight. To eliminate him once and for all, both of them had to scramble for ideas. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 311-315

Chapter 311

Jack, who was by the door, felt slightly comfortable. One hundred million was a really huge amount and he thought Fiona would accept it as she loved money. He had no idea Fiona would resist the temptation and rejected them. Jack thought about it and knocked on the door acting as if he knew nothing.

"Who is it?" The trio in the room was startled. Neil and Ken quickly hid the packet of drugs and bank card away.

"Mother-in-law, I'm back. Is Selena back from work?" Jack yelled at the room in a pretentious way.

"Oh, no! She should get off work soon, why don't you pick her up?" Fiona felt guilty and wanted Jack to leave.

"Alright, I'll fetch her." Jack soon left in his car.

Fiona finally relaxed after Jack left. She patted her chest and said gratefully, "Oh my god, I was so afraid. If he saw the both of you, he might beat you up. Listen to me, this guy has a bad temper and sometimes he's hard-headed who doesn't listen to advice!"

"Auntie, you should give this a second thought. It's one hundred million!" Ken did not reconcile to Fiona's decision. "We'll leave first and you can give us a call after you have made your decision. It's just a

simple task. This drug is hard to detect because it's colorless and tasteless. Apart from that, it takes time to take effect. He's symptoms would only be flu, fever, and fatigue. It'll take one whole month before he dies."

"Leave, we'll speak some other day!" Fiona was so startled by Jack's sudden return and she felt relief after sending them away.

"The both of them are too much! They want to use such a despicable way to get Selena. I dare not provoke people like them," Fiona spoke in fright after she sent them away. "People like them are so despicable. Will they drug Selena if they have any conflict in their marriage? Or will they feed the drugs to me? Poor people like Jack are much more reliable."

It was obvious that Fiona's impression of Jack had changed after Jack gave her money twice and helped her get the 3.8 million back. The most important point was Jack's salary. He had a yearly income of more than 200 million. Hence, why did she need to kill someone for a mere hundred million? Although she disliked Jack and wanted to chase him away, she dared not think about killing him. If Selena and Kylie find out in the future, they would despise her. Hence, Fiona refused the temptation in this crucial moment.

"Sigh. Jack, you bastard, do you have any idea what I have given up for you?" Fiona sighed and was sad. How could she be happy for giving up one hundred million?

"Xena, what happened to you? Why didn't you answer my calls?!" Ben finally found Xena in an internet cafe. He pulled her to the roadside and asked.

"Stop looking for me. It's best if we break up!" Xena looked at Ben and said.

Chapter 312

"Break up? Why do you want to break up? Weren't we doing fine and you were going to marry me?" Ben couldn't accept the reality. He backed up for two steps and felt as if he was struck by lightning.

“why? Money. Who knew that you’re so poor!” Xena was so angry when she thought of how Jack almost killed her that afternoon. It seemed that Ben had no idea what happened that morning.

“Money?” Ben was stunned when he heard this. He begged, “Xena, don’t you worry, we’ll get rich. Do you need money? My mother has money. I can get it from my mother if you need it!”

Xena felt her heartbeat skip a beat when she realized that Ben trusted her. His sister had a high salary, and Jack’s salary was even higher. She had no savings and no place to go because she had spent all her money. If she broke up with Ben, it would be difficult to hook up with another rich man. Why don’t think of a way to continue her relationship with Ben and see if there would be other opportunities to find a sugar daddy.

‘That’s right. Jack is Ben’s brother-in-law. It’s impossible for him to kill me in front of Ben, right? Apart from that, Jack works with the Drake family and the people he comes into contact with are also from that family. There’s a chance for me to get closer to Eldest Young Master Drake if I get the opportunity to meet him. If that’s the case, my social status will improve in leaps and bounds!’ Xena changed her idea after giving it a thought.

She bit her sexy red lips and said with an aggrieved expression, “Ben, I don’t want to break up with you... But I have wronged your family. Will you forgive me?”

Ben immediately responded hearing this. “Xena, don’t you worry. I will forgive you no matter what you did as long as you stay with me. I believe there must be a reason behind what you did!”

“Ben, you’re the best!” Xena was touched. She threw herself into Ben’s embrace and felt relieved.

“It’s okay, stop crying and let me bring you out for good food!” Ben said with a smile.

Xena nodded. “Sounds good. However, let’s not go home and spend the night in the internet cafe. I did something wrong and your parents are angry about it. Let’s give them some time to calm down before going back!”

“Sure, let’s go. I’ll carry you in Honor of Kings!” Ben was extremely happy. He was frightened when Xena requested a break up. He suddenly felt as if he had found something he lost, and all he wanted was to cherish this woman in his arms.

Both of them left quickly.

...

When Jack passed by the kindergarten in his car, he looked over and his face darkened when he saw what he saw. He saw two men surrounding the maid, Jenny, and Kylie in a corner. At the same time, one of the men pushed Jenny with force. Jenny’s electric scooter fell on its side and broke.

“Bad guys!” Kylie looked at both men and yelled out loud.

“Little bastard, what do you know? Why are you poking your head into an adult’s matter?” The man smiled coldly and pushed Kylie.

“Kylie!”

Chapter 313

Jenny was about to get up from the ground when the man pushed Kylie. As Kylie fell on the ground, Jenny quickly leaped, laid down, and caught Kylie with her body.

“Don’t you understand? Children can’t interfere with what the adults do!” a boy standing beside the men said arrogantly.

“See, this child understands!” The man laughed and discovered a button had dropped from Jenny’s white shirt during their fight. He looked inside from above and his eyes lit up. He gulped, “Tell me, how

are you going to compensate me? Don't even think about leaving if you don't have two thousand dollars!"

"Two thousand!" Jenny was extremely frightened. She stood up with Kylie and said angrily, "This is unreasonable. We were just getting in the car and did nothing wrong. You were the one who knocked us down when you were reversing your car. Now, you dare ask us for compensation?"

"That's right. You aren't sorry for knocking into us and actually want us to pay you! All of you are bad guys! If my daddy knows about this, all of you are finished! My daddy is a hero that fights bad people!" Although Kylie was young and her eyes were filled with grievance, she did not cry and kept her composure well.

Other children would have started crying loudly under these circumstances. However, Kylie endured what happened and did not cry. Anybody who saw her aggrieved expression would be distressed.

"he fights bad people? He's a hero?" The man started mocking them after he heard what Kylie said. "What's the point of that? Is he rich? Look at my son, he travels in a BMW. How about you? You can only sit in an electric scooter under the hot sun. Your relatives must have loaned you your school fees to study here."

"Brother, don't waste your time talking to them, sister-in-law is still waiting at home to have dinner with us! Get them to quickly pay us!" The other man had tattoos on his arms. There was a scary looking green dragon on his left arm and a ferocious white tiger on the right one.

"I... I don't have money! I'm just a maid and I'm picking up my boss' daughter!" Jenny was frightened. They were being unreasonable and she had no idea what to do.

"It's just a car! My dad has a sports car that looks much better than yours!" Kylie scolded angrily.

"you're a maid? Your dad has a sports car? You must be lying. Admit it and stop acting in front of us! How would you be riding an electric scooter if you're rich?" The young boy's father started laughing. "I

don't care about your situation and you must compensate me today. Didn't you see that I was reversing? Why didn't you move? Are you blind?"

The people around them looked at Jenny and Kylie in empathy. However, they could not do anything as this world was unjust and unfair. Powerful people had always been bullying the weak ones.

"Daddy!" At this moment, Kylie saw Jack's car parked by the side of the road and he was walking toward them.

Jack felt warm when he heard his daughter addressing him as daddy. He walked over and knelt down. "Kylie, daddy saw what happened. Don't you worry. Daddy will beat the bad guys!"

"Okay! Daddy is a hero that fights bad people!" Kylie nodded and said.

When Jack saw an abrasion wound on Kylie's calf, his face immediately darkened. "You bastards are really good at throwing your weight, aye!"

Both men started panicking when they looked at the Porsche parked by the side and looked at their BMW that was worth only around 200 thousand.

Chapter 314

The skinny man immediately panicked and spoke to his brother softly, "Brother, what should we do? This person drives a Porsche 911. F*cking hell, it seems that we have caused trouble. That car costs one to two million!"

His brother heard him and smiled coldly. "Big brother, you're too cowardly. Why should we be afraid? You don't have much social experience that's why you're frightened by him. This person is lying!"

"What's going on?" The skinny man was doubtful.

“Hey, look at him. He dresses so normally. Does he look like someone that can afford a car?” The man with the tattoos smiled and continued, “I’m confident that he’s just a driver for someone else! This woman doesn’t seem to be a maid. She must be his wife!”

“Oh, I see!” The skinny man suddenly understood everything and spoke, “Young man, how dare you describe me like that. don’t even think about leaving if you don’t have three thousand dollars!” He paused and pointed to the Porsche before continuing, “Don’t think of me as a fool. You’re just a driver! Do you think that I would be afraid of you because you drive a sports car? why should I be afraid of a driver?!”

“How dare you ask me for money when you knocked down my maid and daughter while reversing? I should be the one asking you for money!” Jack walked to the electric scooter after he spoke. He picked up the scooter with one hand and threw it toward the BMW.

Bang!

The BMW dented. The windscreen of the car shattered and the hood of the bonnet collapsed.

“Young man, how dare you smash my car! Are you trying to get yourself killed?” The person was extremely angry. He walked forward with the intention to hit Jack.

Jack caught his hand and squeezed it lightly. The man immediately knelt on the ground in pain. “I would kill you now if there were no children around!”

“F*ck!” The other man with tattoos rushed forward when he saw his big brother being hit.

Jack kicked and the man flew backward, smashing onto the top of the car. He coughed out blood and his face turned pale.

“Ouch, ouch, I dare not do this again! Please let go of me, brother!” The skinny man knew Jack’s ability and begged for forgiveness.

“Don’t show off in front of me with just a mere BMW! If you want to cause any trouble, you can find me at the Drake family mansion. I’ll be waiting there!” Jack kicked him and he fell flat on his face.

He then turned around and said to Jenny, “Jenny, are you alright? Who knew that there’d be such vile people!”

“I’m fine!” Jenny smiled and said to Jack, “Mister White, I should be the one feeling bad. I failed to protect Kylie and she fell down!”

Jack smiled and felt warm, “You’ve tried your best and this is my fault. I wanted to give this car to you so you can fetch Kylie in it. I’d forgotten about it because I was busy with work these days. I’m so sorry that you have to fetch Kylie with an electric scooter!” Jack continued, “Since your electric scooter is damaged, why don’t you drive my car? I’ll get a taxi to fetch Selena later!”

“No, no! I’m not daring enough to drive such an expensive car! Besides, I can’t afford the petrol for this car, it doesn’t suit me! I’ll be panicky if I drive it!” Jenny quickly waved her hand and said.

Jack looked around and discovered an Audi 4S-Authorized car dealership opposite where they were.

“What if I buy you an Audi? It doesn’t have to be too expensive so how about an A6 ? I’ll give it to you as a gift and you can use it to fetch Kylie in the future!”

Chapter 315

Jack spoke after giving it some thought. “By the way, if anyone asks you about it, don’t tell them that I bought it. Just say your boyfriend gave it to you, okay?”

“But... It’s so expensive! Don’t you have to discuss with Miss Selena before you give it to me?” Jenny said in embarrassment. She was extremely surprised because an Audi A6 was not cheap. Jack actually said that he would give it to her and it would be hers in the future.

She was just a maid and had never imagined that she would be able to drive such a car. What made her speechless was when Jack said he wanted to give her the Porsche. She almost passed out from that.

“Why do we need to have a discussion? It’s not very expensive. Just don’t tell her about this, alright?” Jack smiled and reminded her.

“Oh, okay!” Jenny nodded. She felt that her boss was becoming increasingly mysterious. It seemed that he was not a commoner. At least, he brought money back from the army. He seemed to have received millions in rewards when he retired as a veteran.

Jack picked Kylie up, looked at the wound on her leg and asked, “Kylie, does it hurt?”

“No! Kylie is so happy to see daddy fight the bad guys. I want to fight the bad guys too when I grow up!” Kylie had an innocent smile on her face. To her, Jack was like a mountain—tall and powerful. As long as her father appeared, the bad guys could only kneel and beg for forgiveness.

“Eat this candy. The wound on your leg will heal quickly after you eat it!” Jack smiled and fetched a small black pill. “Remember, swallow it in one go!”

“Okay!” Kylie nodded her head seriously and swallowed it in one go.

Kylie frowned after she swallowed it and felt as if she had been tricked. “Daddy, why does it taste bitter?”

“Silly girl, medicine is usually bitter.” Jack petted Kylie’s head and kissed her cheeks. This sense of belonging in a family was really enjoyable!

Jack spoke to Jenny embarrassingly after they walked for some time and discovered something was

wrong. "Jenny, you seemed to have lost a button!"

Jenny lowered her head to look and her face blushed into a bright red color. Although Jack reminded her with good intentions, it still caused her to be extremely shy.

"Big brother, it seems that we have misjudged. That woman is really a maid!"

"Look, he's going to buy an A6 for his maid to fetch his child to school!"

"He intended to give the Porsche to the maid. He would have done that if the maid didn't reject it. F*ck, we have really met someone that we can't afford to provoke!" The man with tattoos finally came down from the top of the car and spoke with blood at the corners of his mouth.

The skinny man twitched a few times, looked at his car and said, "It's all your fault. My loss is bigger now because of your misjudgement. We've been hit, the car has been smashed, and we don't even dare to complain out loud!"

Happy Valentines Day guys! No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 316-320

Chapter 316

Soon, Jenny drove Kylie home in a newly purchased Audi. Jack, on the other hand, drove to the company and waited for Selena. They drove back home in their respective cars after Selena got off work.

"Wow, is this a new car? It looks good!" When Selena returned to the house, she saw the car that was parked outside. "Who does this belong to? Did you buy it for Ben with your own money?"

"No. Where would I have the time to buy a car for your brother? Besides, your brother isn't home yet! Didn't Jack promise your brother that he would buy a car that's worth below one million after he gets

his salary? Why would I use my own money when someone else is willing to pay for it!” Fiona immediately said and looked at Jack after she finished speaking. She was obviously waiting for Jack to buy a car for her son.

“Miss Selena, this is mine!” Jenny ran over and said embarrassingly.

“It’s yours? Not bad! How did you come up with so much money?” Selena was happy and surprised at the same time. Although her salary was considered high, Jenny was from a poor family.

“This... My boyfriend bought it for me!” Jenny smiled and replied.

“Isn’t your boyfriend from a common family too? This car should be around 500 to 600 thousand? Our original plan was to get a car for you to fetch Kylie after we get our salary! Your boyfriend really treats you well that he buys such a nice car for you!” Selena was really surprised. After all, this was not a cheap car.

“It’s fine, Miss Selena. I’ll fetch Kylie each day with this car!” Jenny said with a smile.

“How can we do this? I’ll ask Jack to give you an increment so that you can at least claim the petrol from us every month!” Selena said with a smile, “How can we ask our maid to pay for our expenses!”

“Miss Selena, it’s really nothing!” Jenny was in an awkward position. She finally understood why Jack forbade her to tell the truth. Fiona would be unhappy about it. It was fine to buy a car and let Jenny drive it, but would Fiona agree to Jack’s action of giving it to Jenny? Of course not! After all, Jack had not bought a car for her son yet, how would she agree to this.

“We must give her an increment!” Jack chimed in, “Jenny, what’s your current salary?”

“It was originally six thousand but Miss Selena said to increase it by one thousand so it’s seven thousand!” Jenny smiled and said. She was very satisfied with this salary.

“How about this? Let’s pay you ten thousand a month including the petrol allowance! It would be easy to calculate a whole number!” Jack thought about it and said.

“This... This is too much!” Jenny was embarrassed. This car was given to her by Jack and he wanted to pay her so much for petrol.

She was not highly educated and she was satisfied to work as a maid in the Taylor family because Selena had been treating her well all this while. She had no idea that they would pay her a monthly salary of ten thousand. That amount was almost the same as the white-collar workers in big companies.

“It’s not much. The Taylor family has so many maids but you are the closest one to me. Besides, you’ve been helping us in secret for the past five years. Don’t be modest!” Selena was a kind and grateful person. Now that their lives had improved, she naturally wanted to take care of this maid who followed her unswervingly.

By this moment, Kylie finished showering and came running out from the bathroom.

Chapter 317

“Kylie’s leg!” Jenny was stunned when she saw Kylie’s leg. There was a wound and blood just now!

Now, there was nothing on her leg to show that she had fallen.

“What’s wrong with her leg?” Selena turned around and looked in doubt.

“Oh, it’s nothing. Kylie fell down earlier!” Jack said with a smile, “Let’s go in and have dinner.”

“Jenny, come with us. Go home after you’ve had dinner with us!” Selena pulled Jenny with her into the house for dinner.

“Jack, what happened after you followed them? Did you get mother’s money back? Was Xena the one who did it? Did you see her?” In the morning, Selena went to work after she sent Fiona and the others back home. She had been busy in the office for the entire day and was unsure about what happened after.

“Yes, I saw her together with the robbers and I’ve retrieved the money!” Jack nodded and did not mention that the motor robbers’ leader was the son of the Dragon God Clan’s head.

“It’s good that we got it back!” Joan, who was on the side, felt relieved. She was afraid the money was not retrieved, Fiona might ask Jack to compensate it to her. After all, Joan had understood Fiona’s character in the past five years.

“Mother, I’ve been telling you that Xena isn’t a good person and you didn’t believe me. Look, do you know what kind of a person she is now?” Selena finally said in confidence, “We can’t have her around Ben again.”

“Sigh, it’s really hard to understand someone’s true nature!” Fiona sighed. “I thought this girl would be a good woman because she was from a poor family and had a difficult life. Although there are times when she dresses up flamboyantly but she should be a kind person. I have no idea...that she would do this for money!”

“That’s right. There’s no way we’ll allow her to continue hanging around Ben! She might lead Ben down the road of destruction!” Andrew drank some liquor and spoke decisively.

“I don’t think that she’ll still be dating Ben after this. After all, dignity is as important to man as the bark is to the tree!” Jack estimated that Xena escaped from death and she would be so frightened to appear in front of them for the time being.

It was obvious that he did not want to talk much about how he killed those motor robbers and the Five Tigers of the Dragon Gods as he did not want to expose his identity. He wanted to have a stable life and stay by his wife and daughter’s side.

Fiona had a different idea as she felt unhappy when she thought about the money she lost that afternoon. She could not control herself and stared at Jack. "Yes, dignity is as important to man as the bark is to the tree. However, there are people with skin as thick as the wall. He knows that he's not worthy to be with my daughter but still won't leave."

"Mother, why are you talking about this again? Didn't we agree to observe Jack's performance during grandfather's 70th birthday? It's not too late for you to chase him away if he can't come up with the money!" Selena helped persuade Fiona.

"Humph, it's happening soon!" Fiona coughed and said.

At this moment, the piercing sound of car horn could be heard. Cars were parked outside their house and their lights were on, facing inside of the house.

"Who is it!" Fiona walked toward the door angrily. "It's already evening. Who's causing trouble here?!"

After she opened the door, she was so frightened that she immediately closed the door and petted her chest. "Oh my god, there're so many sports car and people. What do they want?!"

Chapter 318

"A lot of sports cars?" Jack and the others frowned and were stunned.

However, a voice could be heard coming from an amplifier outside. "Everybody inside, listen to us. You have been surrounded!"

...

"No, that's wrong. Jack, listen to me. I'm here to marry you! Surrender and come out quickly. Follow me

home and marry me!” Jack and the others were even more stunned when they heard this. Who was this woman? They had no idea who it was when they heard the voice through the speakers.

“Marry you?” Selena was so confused and completely stunned. A woman drove a sports car over to marry her husband? Was that a drama series?!

“I... I have no idea who it is!” Jack was embarrassed. “I don’t know a lot of people in Eastfield. I’ve only come back from the army for a few days!”

“I know!” Fiona’s expression darkened at this moment and looked at Jack angrily. “Jack, shouldn’t you admit that you’re a toy boy? Other than the rich woman who spent five hundred million on a luminous pearl at the auction, who else can drive so many sports cars here?”

“Impossible!” Jack’s expression darkened. He knew Lana very well and she would not do such an impulsive thing. Besides, Lana was his apprentice and they were in a master-apprentice relationship.

“Mother, you opened the door but did not see who was outside?” Selena frowned and was quite unhappy. After all, Jack was her husband and they had a child.

She had no idea who wanted to meddle in their relationship. On top of that, this person was different. The others were afraid that their identity would be exposed. This woman, on the other hand, drove so many sports cars here and admitted out loud that she wanted to marry Jack. How could Selena accept this?

“It was impossible for me to see clearly. I only saw a row of bright red Ferraris and Porches. They lined up in a row, turned on their headlights and it was too dazzling. There were a dozen people!” Fiona looked at Jack before continuing, “Jack, this is too much. Other than that rich woman, who else could this be? You really have no shame!”

Andrew was so angry that his face turned pale and his voice trembled, “Jack, what’s the meaning of this? That person even came right to your doorstep searching for you. If it’s you wanna be a sugar baby and

have found your sugar mama, you can leave now. Go, go enjoy your life!”

“Mister and Missus Taylor, this must be a misunderstanding. It’s impossible! My son is not that kind of person. Besides, he had just come back a few days ago, how can this be possible?” Joan, who stood by the side, tried to persuade the others.

Fiona was irate and began yelling, “a few days ago? Somebody is ready to marry him only after he’s back for a few days. If he’s back here a few more days earlier, he would have more than three thousand women in the harem!”

“If he’s a capable and wealthy person, I wouldn’t object even if he marries eight or ten wives. The problem now is that you don’t have money yet and you have already started... That person even...even came here looking for you!”

“I... I want out!” Fiona was so angry that she started being unreasonable and made a scene. She sat down right on the ground.

Chapter 319

Jack was embarrassed. He spoke to Selena, “Selena, please believe in me. I really don’t know who the woman outside is. Let’s go out and take a look. Maybe she’s at the wrong place and is looking for the wrong person?”

“How is that possible? She’s calling out your name. Are you trying to tell me your name isn’t Jack?” Selena glared at Jack before walking outside, “I want to take a look. I want to see who dares get on our turf!”

Jack was slightly surprised before feeling happy when he saw this situation. His wife was jealous! The headlamps were really glaring as she looked out the door. Her eyes adapted to the light for a few seconds before she could see the situation outside clearly.

“Hey, they’ve finally come out!” At that moment, a fat woman jumped down from the bonnet. She

looked at Jack happily. “My Handsome Jack, I’ve been mesmerized by you since the first time we met. Your handsome look, terrific fighting ability and your indifference when you reject others fascinated me. After I returned home, I couldn’t eat or sleep and I only wanted to see you again! Now, I’ve finally summoned the courage to come ask your hand for marriage. Marry me! I’m richer than the Taylor family. Being the son-in-law that marries into the George family would definitely be better than being a son-in-law here. Our family will not look down on you and I’ll protect you!”

The woman in front of Jack wore a white wedding dress and had a bouquet of roses in her hands. She looked at Jack and then looked away embarrassedly.

“Marry her! Marry her! Marry her!” A group of young men and women, who seemed to be the fat woman’s friends, walked forward to sprinkle rose petals on them and yelled out loudly.

The sports cars behind them were decorated like wedding cars.

“Sharon George, the daughter of the George family!” Finally, Fiona could not stand it anymore and got up from the ground. She ran outside and tried to see if it was the rich woman who wore a mask. She could not help but exclaimed after she recognized the fat woman in front of her.

Sharon was the daughter of a first-class aristocratic family. Keep in mind that the George family only had one daughter and the entire family spoiled her. She was the only heir to the George family. That was why many men still wanted to marry into her family even though Sharon weighed around 100kg. Of course, these men were those who wanted their money because they had no money and power on their own. If they married into the George family, they would not have to worry about money for their entire life.

Contrary to popular belief, Sharon was picky in terms of choosing a partner even if she was not young and was fat. She did not like those who have bad temperament and those who wanted to marry her for money. It turns out that she was the person who confessed and proposed so boldly to Jack!

“This...” Selena covered her mouth in surprise and was confused. She could not believe that Sharon, who had a high social status with her head up in the sky—and fat—would ask Jack to marry into her family.

Jack was also confused when he saw this woman and his face was twisted.

“Marry her, marry her!” The young men and women beside them chanted and sprinkled red roses. Sharon took stolen glances at Jack and she lowered her head shyly after every glance. It seemed that she had really fallen in love with Jack.

Chapter 320

“Wait!” As Jack was about to reject Sharon, when Fiona suddenly spoke.

Everybody silenced and looked at her.

Fiona looked at Sharon and said, “Miss George, this isn’t a joke. Have you considered it properly? Do you really want Jack to marry into your family?”

“I... I’ve thought of it thoroughly!” Sharon replied.

“Give us some time!” Fiona replied she cunningly smiled.

“Sure. After all, this is an important matter in life and I showed up out of the blue, it’s only fair that you have some time to discuss it first! However, I really like Jack a lot and I’m serious about it! I don’t mind being the second wife!” Sharon said.

“Yes, I understand. Let us go in and discuss. We’ll give you an answer in a while!” Fiona nodded as she spoke.

“What’s there to discuss? There’s no need for that!” Jack’s face darkened and said, “Selena is my wife and I love her. On top of that, I have a cute daughter and I’d change nothing about my life. I only want to live a normal life!”

Jack paused and spoke to Sharon, “Miss George, thank you for your good intention, but, I’m really not

interested in you. Although my words might be hurtful, they're the truth."

Sharon's facial expression immediately darkened and spoke aggrievedly, "I know you must dislike me for being fat and ugly, right? Will you like me if I lose weight?"

Jack was embarrassed. "This has nothing to do with your figure. I can see that you have very standard features. If you manage to slim down, you'll definitely be a pretty woman. By that time, you'll have many pursuers and maybe you'll know what type of man you like by then!"

"Miss George, don't listen to him!" Fiona glared at Jack and continued speaking to Sharon, "Wait for us here. We'll discuss inside!" After she finished speaking, she pulled Jack and walked inside.

Selena frowned, smiled to Sharon, and followed them into the house. "Mother, what do we need to discuss? Jack said that he doesn't like that woman. Can't we just ask her to leave? Besides, she's so fat. Nobody will agree to be with her apart from the men who want her money, let alone Jack!" Selena rebutted peevishly.

"What do you understand!" Fiona replied. "First of all, this woman is ugly and fat, but she has a standard face and is fat in a cute way. We can consider her a chubby beauty! Second of all, all of you have never met her. I met her once when she was young. She was not fat and had a nice figure. Everybody said that she'll be a beauty when she grows up!"

Happy Valentines Day guys! No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 321-325

Chapter 321

"You want Jack to be with her because of this?" Selena was extremely angry and she could not believe her mother's words.

"Hey, can you wait for me to finish!" Fiona smiled bitterly and continued, "Who is she? She's the

daughter of the George family. She made such a big scene today and brought all her friends along. Do you think it will work if Jack rejects her in front of everybody?"

Fiona paused, picked up a cup by the side, and drank some tea before continuing, "The 'face' is as important to man as the bark is to the tree. It'd be embarrassing for her if Jack rejects her outright. By then, we'll offend. Besides, it takes a lot of courage for a girl to do this!"

Selena could not help but nodded after she heard what her mother said. "That's true. I've heard that Sharon is a kind person and she did a lot of charity work. She craves for food now and cannot control her appetite, so it'll be impossible for her to lose weight! And, this is the first time she initiated a confession and even I was taken back by what she did."

As they speak, Selena looked at Jack, who was by her side. "It seems that she likes you very much. She didn't have the appetite to eat because of you!"

"It doesn't matter if she likes me or not. I only like my wife!" Jack shrugged his shoulders and his words cheered Selena up.

"It's quite normal that you dislike her, she doesn't even have one tenth of my daughter's looks. The main issue here is, she's from a first-class aristocratic family and we cannot offend her! Apart from that, she's so rich, if she's willing to be the second wife as what she said, I think that we can try it out. We'll be a family with her and we'll be rich!" Fiona could not help but was tempted by Sharon's property.

"Afraid of offending her?" Jack was in an awkward state. He thought about it and said, "Don't worry. Since she's here for me, I'll settle this matter! I'll go out and ask her to leave. I won't trouble the rest of you!"

"You can ask her to leave? I don't think that she'll listen to you. Didn't you see that there are a lot of bodyguards with her today? It's obvious that she'll take you by force if you reject her," Fiona continued, "In my opinion, it's better if you accept her. That way, we'll benefit from her wealth. However, you wouldn't be marrying into her family, she'll be marrying into our family as the second wife instead! After she inherits the George family's properties the future, the estates will be yours and also ours too. That's so much money. We'll be well-off in the future!"

“I think you’re blinded by money!” Jack shook his head powerlessly and walked outside alone. “You don’t need to follow me out, I can settle the matter by myself. Don’t worry, I can make them leave in three minutes, okay?”

“Don’t get into a fight!” Fiona was frightened when she heard this. “Jack, don’t fight them. They’re a very powerful first-class aristocratic family. Their power is different from the Clark family and Hugo family. On top of that, there are several powerful guards, known as guardians, in such families!

“If we’re left with no choices, you can coax her to leave first. I think that she’s only acting impulsively. She might discover that she doesn’t like you that much after some time to calm down. Or she might have a new target and will give up!” Selena was also frightened. She knew that Jack was a guy who liked to solve matters with violence.

However, Sharon was from a first-class aristocratic family. On top of that, a girl needed to gather a lot of courage to confess proactively. She would be so sad if she was rejected by Jack!

“Don’t worry, I won’t fight with them!” Jack turned around and smiled at Selena before walking outside.

Chapter 322

Sharon, who was standing outside, was extremely nervous. She could not help but tighten her fists and lowered her head in fright. She knew absolutely well that she was too fat. However, she could not control herself with food—especially sweet stuff. This caused her to gain more and more weight. There was a huge possibility that Jack would reject her due to her body size.

“Sharon, don’t worry about it. We believe in you! A woman with confidence is the prettiest in the world and you’ll surely succeed! Besides, you’ll have to confess to him to know if he feels the same way. How else will he know? You’ll never succeed if you don’t confess, but you stand a chance if you do. It’s good to try no matter the outcome!” A sexy woman with a leather skirt and long legs smiled at Sharon and they seemed to have a good relationship.

“Thank you, Selena!” Sharon smiled slightly and nodded. She remembered how others laughed at her behind her back after she grew fat. There were even people who mocked her.

However, she was not calculative just because she was of higher status than everyone else. After all, she was fat and that was the truth. Her only best friend, Selena Smith, treated her well and constantly encouraged her.

Jack walked outside. Sharon was suddenly excited.

“What’s your decision, young man?” Selena immediately walked forward. She had a pair of big beautiful eyes.

Nobody knew that she was waiting to make fun of Sharon because she believed that Jack would reject Sharon. After all, Jack was a veteran and he had a unyielding temperament. He had already expressed his thoughts and his wife was so much prettier than Sharon. It would not be a surprise if he rejected Sharon.

Sharon would really be humiliated this way. After all, her identity as the George family’s future heir had always attracted the attention of the masses. People would make fun of her if the news of her being rejected after confessing to a married man spread on the papers or by words.

Unexpectedly, Jack looked at Selena deeply before walking to Sharon.

He smiled indifferently and looked sympathetically at Sharon, who was in front of him.

Sharon raised her head, bit her red lip and said, “Don’t tell me the answer. I know that you don’t like me, but I feel that I’m already in my late twenties and this is the first time I met someone that I really like. I wouldn’t give up without confessing my feelings. Instead of keeping it to myself, it’s better for me to speak my mind!”

However, Jack said, "Ask your friends and bodyguards to leave, except for one driver. I want to talk to you in private!"

"Talk in private?" Sharon felt as if she was dreaming when she heard this and she could not believe it. Jack did not reject her or hate her, instead, he wanted to talk to her in private.

However, she quickly understood that Jack probably wanted to reject her and did not want others to witness it. He wanted to save her from an awkward situation and prevent her from being made fun of.

This man was really considerate.

Chapter 323

"Everybody can go back first. Howard, stay back and send me home later. I want to have a chat with Jack!" Sharon turned around and smiled. Although she was fat, her smile was very sweet and mesmerizing.

"We... We'll leave immediately!" Selena was disappointed that she could not witness Sharon being rejected. She knew this man would not be interested in Sharon. Otherwise, he must have a very weird taste.

When Selena thought about how Jack was interjected by Fiona for a discussion when he intended to reject Sharon, she felt that Jack might be convinced by Fiona. After all, the George family was so rich and he might agree to it because of money. Selena instantly felt cheated as she looked at the house. She would lose the chance to make fun of Sharon if Jack really agreed to the proposal.

"Yes, all of you can go back!" Sharon waved her hand and said, "I thank all my friends that came here for me today. I'll treat everybody to a meal some other day!"

Selena could only drive away with the others after everybody left.

Fiona looked at the situation outside from inside of the house and said, "This young man is really good. He didn't need to do anything to make everybody leave!"

However, she soon saw something and said surprisingly, "This is weird. Why did he ask Sharon to stay? There's even a driver and a car waiting for them. Hey, they've gone under the big banyan tree at the entrance!" She paused and continued happily, "Did he make up his mind and wants Sharon to be his second wife? We'll be rich if he makes the right choice!"

"Mother, what're you talking about? Jack told us that he doesn't like Sharon and I'm sure that he wouldn't agree to her proposal!" Selena rolled her eyes at Fiona and said, "I think he's trying to save Sharon some trouble by asking the others to leave first. After all, she's the daughter of the George family. She'll be ashamed if she was rejected in front of so many people!"

At this moment, under the big banyan tree...

"I can see that you've never been in a relationship and crave for love! However, love is not an impulse decision to make and you shouldn't be blinded by your feelings at first sight!" Jack looked at Sharon and broke the silence.

Sharon lowered her head and did not speak.

Jack fetched a cigarette, lit it, and took a whiff. He continued, "I can see that you're a very nice and kind person! Otherwise, some of your friends wouldn't treat you as their true friend!"

"Really? Thank you. I'm satisfied that I got your compliment!" Sharon's eyes lit up after she heard Jack and continued, "Actually, I know that you'll reject me, but I can't reconcile my emotions. It's better to fail than to hold it back. Holding back is uncomfortable!"

She stretched her body in relief after she spoke and continued, "Fortunately, you didn't reject me in front of everybody even though you didn't like me. This shows me that I was right, you're really a good person. I really envy your wife, Selena, for meeting such a good husband! By the way, will you make fun

of me? That I did such a crazy thing after being instigated by others!”

“I can see that some of your friends are genuine to you and wish for you to find true love!” Jack smiled and continued, “However, some of them aren’t your friends but poisonous snakes. They stay by your side waiting to make fun of you!”

Chapter 324

Sharon was in disbelief after she heard what Jack said. She smiled and said, “How... How is that possible? Are you talking about the friends who were with me just now?”

“Yes, I’m talking about the one who talked to me last!” Jack nodded. He believed that he was a good judge of character because of his experience in the army and the amount of people he met.

“Selena Smith? How is that possible? She’s the one who treats me best among all my friends! She had never disliked me and had always been considerate. She was the one who’d taken the initiative to plan this confession!” Sharon obviously in disbelief.

However, Jack replied, “Then it must be her. Do you think that she’s doing this for you? She’s the one who wants to make a joke out of you!”

“Impossible... You’ve only met her once and you don’t know her. She’s a really nice person!” Sharon shook her head profusely. She would like to believe that it was somebody else and not Selena.

“You’re the one who doesn’t understand her!” Jack smiled bitterly and smoked the cigarette in his hand again. “Let me ask you. Did you have a nice figure and a pretty face in the past?”

“Yes. I can’t control my diet. I’ll drool and crave for food every time I see it and gain weight after. Most importantly, I enjoy meat and sweet stuff very much!” Sharon spoke in embarrassment, “I find that running and other exercises have no effect on me. Instead, I grow fatter every time I try to lose weight!”

“When did this start?” Jack asked.

“Around three years ago. I’m only twenty-one years old. Sigh, I’m afraid that I can’t find my true love in the future!” Sharon looked at Jack after she spoke. “I think I don’t stand a chance with you. It doesn’t matter if I like you because you have a wife and you don’t like me. Sigh, what should I do! This is bothering me!”

Jack could not help but laughed when he saw Sharon’s cute expression. “Don’t you worry. All you have to do is lose weight! You’ll definitely find someone who you like and likes you in return. You’ll have self-confidence after you slim down!”

“It’s easier said than done.” Sharon smiled bitterly. “I have no idea what to do. I should be thankful as long as I don’t gain more weight!”

“Think about it, does your best friend offer you food consistently, or occasionally? Was it something peculiar? Think about it carefully. She would have started giving you this three years ago and has never stopped!” Jack knew the answer very well.

He intended to pay the George family a visit in order to help Sharon after the incident at the auction house. He had no idea that they would meet under these circumstances before he had the chance to visit!

“Food? I don’t think so.” Sharon frowned and thought about it. She failed to recall if Selena had given her something to eat regularly after thinking about it for a long time.

“Think carefully. It mustn’t be nothing. Trust me, there must be something, she’s hurting you. I trust my instinct!” Jack said confidently.

Chapter 325

Sharon thought about it for a long time before gasping. “I know. It’s not food, she’d been giving me tea leaves. She told me that it was of good quality and originated from her hometown. I think the tea has a

nice aroma so I drink it often!” Sharon paused and took in another breath. “She emphasised that this tea was expensive and exotic so I should only keep it to myself! I didn’t pay much attention to it but she sends it to me every other month and constantly asks if I have finished the tea!”

Sharon gulped and looked at Jack in horror after she figured it out. “You’re saying that there’s something wrong with the tea leaves!”

Jack nodded. “That must be it. She must’ve tampered the tea leaves!”

“How could she do that? I treat Selena so well, why does she do this to me?” Sharon was disappointed. She walked a few steps backward and was unwilling to accept the fact.

However, what Jack said made sense and she knew things were not incidental. Was it possible that Selena wanted to make fun of her for planning a confession that was bound to fail?

“Commoners will only know about medications for losing weight and not so much about drugs for putting on weight! Furthermore, this medication is weird as it will cause people to lose control over their appetite and develop strong craving for food! Consuming this drug for a prolonged period of time will lead to addiction and will cause huge problems for the body. Apart from that, there aren’t any obvious symptoms in the beginning and the symptoms gradually appeared after a month of intake. Your condition is the same as the symptoms. Others wouldn’t have heard of this medication as it’s very rare, it’s known as Tanio,” Jack explained slowly and every sentence terrified Sharon.

She had absolutely no idea that her best friend was the person behind all these. She had no idea why she gained weight and had always blamed it on herself for being gluttonous. She had no idea that it was under the influence of medication.

“What should I do now? Does it mean that I’ll recover once I stop drinking the tea? Will I slim down with consistent exercise?” Sharon looked forward to it. Previously, slimming down was akin to miracle to her. It was an unachievable and extravagant hope. She saw hope. Since Jack could decipher the situation, he might have a way to solve it.

“the tea leaves must have been soaked in Tanio liquid before drying and giving it to you! It’d be easy to get rid of the addiction if you’ve just started using these leaves for one or two months. But you’ve been using them for a long time and you can’t live without them. You’re addicted to it and long for the smell of it!” Jack laughed and continued, “I can help you, but you have to promise me to not ask me to marry you after I’ve helped you. Let me go and you can marry a young man who’s better than me!”

“It’ll be hard to find a better man than you!” Sharon pouted before continuing, “Okay, you have my words. I’ll stop pestering you as long as you treat me and I manage to lose twenty-five kilograms of weight. And I’ll treat you as my best, best, best friend ever!”

“Alright! Sit down and I’ll treat you now! After you return home, don’t drink the tea anymore. You’ll no longer be addicted to the smell and I can even make you disgust it! As for the twenty-five kilograms that you mentioned, it’s too little. It won’t be a problem even if you want to lose fifty kilograms in a few days!” Jack nodded and as he opened her palm, a small box appeared out of thin air. There was a collection of silver needles inside.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 326-330

Chapter 326

“How is it possible to lose fifty kilograms in three days? Will that be too fast? Are there any side effects? Can your silver needles work? This is the first time I’ve ever seen such a method!” Sharon was extremely excited. If Jack was not lying to her, her weight would decrease down to 50 kilograms. If that was the case, she would be quite slim.

After all, she was around 170 centimeter tall and her figure would be absolutely perfect if her weight was around 50 kilograms.

“the silver needles are to get rid of the toxins in your body. Although your body didn’t react to it, the medications carry toxins! The toxins stay in your body and it’ll be fine after you vomit. You won’t crave for the tea leaves after and you can get rid of your addiction! Throw the tea leaves away when you get home. As for slimming down, I’ll give you three pills for that later. This is something that I made myself and it’s worth a sky-high price. Eat one every day and I’m sure that you’ll lose fifteen kilograms daily.” Jack smiled and took out a silver needle. He slowly pricked it into one of the acupuncture points on the top of Sharon’s head.

“Can you see clearly in the dark here?” Sharon was worried. After all, Jack was a veteran, an ex-soldier.

A soldier told her that he could cure her disease and get rid of the toxin in her body. Something felt fishy there... However, she had always been looking forward to slimming down. Her life had been very tiring as she would be huffing and puffing walking up and down the stairs. This made her feel worthless and she wanted to give up life. Jack had given her hope and it might be her only hope. Even though it was quite unbelievable that Jack was treating her as a veteran, Sharon still chose to believe in Jack.

Jack was able to sense Sharon’s worries and said, “Don’t you worry. I’m a highly skilled doctor in the warfield. Both killing and saving people are my strong suits!”

“Really, I know a miracle-working doctor in the warfield and he’s really good! He saved lots of soldiers! This person is my idol. He’s not only a God of War, he’s also a doctor that saves lives!” Sharon smiled indifferently and said.

Jack, who was behind her, heard this and felt awkward. Would he frighten her if he told her that the person she was talking about was his disciple, Ethan Hays? Only a small number of people knew that Jack was a miracle-working doctor. Jack was the doctor in the beginning but he got tied up later on as assignments started to pile up. Subsequently, he discovered that Ethan had medical knowledge and was very gifted so he passed on his knowledge to him.

Although Ethan’s skills were not as good as his and would constantly call him to ask for help, Ethan was publicly known as the miracle-working doctor. On the other hand, nobody knew that Jack’s skills were far more advanced than Ethan.

“What... What’re you doing?” Selena was having dinner until she noticed that Jack did not come into the house for a long time. She looked out of the house and saw both of them sitting under the big banyan tree.

She was too curious so she walked toward them to have a look. She was surprised by what she saw. Jack had actually pricked a silver needle on top of Sharon’s head.

The bodyguard who stayed back and was responsible to send Sharon home also followed Selena from the behind. He almost jumped in fright when he saw what was going on.

His face darkened and he spoke angrily, "Young man, what're you doing? You're only a veteran. If something happens to Miss Sharon, your entire family will have to die with her!

"Don't interrupt, he's treating me!" Sharon hushed.

Chapter 327

"Treatment?" Selena and the bodyguard were stupefied by the answer. This young man could give treatment?

However, since Sharon warned them not to disturb, they kept quiet and could only wait silently by the side. After some time, there were around a dozen silver needles on Sharon's head. Jack turned the needles slightly with complete focus and attention. He removed needles one by one after a while. The bodyguard relaxed when he saw that Sharon was fine after the needles were taken down.

Suddenly, Sharon spat out a mouthful of blood and her face turned pale.

"What's going on? Young man, what's wrong with Miss Sharon? You're dead if something's wrong!" The bodyguard was frightened when he saw what happened. He tightened his fist as he looked at Jack angrily and was about to hit him.

"This is poisonous blood. I've circulated all the toxins out of her body!" Jack smiled indifferently.

He took out three smelly pills and passed them to Sharon. "Take one daily. Remember to take them half an hour after breakfast!"

“Okay, Thank you. I’ll repay you if I really made it!” Sharon smiled and continued, “You’ll be my best friend then!”

Jack smiled and said, “You don’t have to repay me. I can sell my medication for ten or one hundred million per pill. I’ll give this to you and I only have one request. Stop pestering me and stop thinking about marrying me, okay?”

Sharon was extremely embarrassed and she smiled. “Alright, I promise!”

Selena, who was by the side, felt moved by what Jack did. This guy was bragging. How could three black as charcoal pills cost so much? Only Sharon, who was a simpleton would believe in him.

“Oh yes, I think it’s best for you if you don’t leave your house for these three days! You’ll have frequent toilet trips. I’m also afraid that your parents might not recognize you if you hide and suddenly appear in front of them. Don’t meet anyone and just be with your parents! Observe the results after three days!” Jack thought and reminded Sharon.

“Okay. As for that bastard, Selena, I won’t meet her for these three days. I’ll get back to her after I feel better. She’s too much! I’ve been treating her so well but she wants to hurt me!” Sharon was extremely angry when she thought about how Selena was the reason behind her misery. She would definitely get revenge for this.

Sharon soon left in a car with her bodyguard.

“What medication did you give her? You even bragged that it can be sold for ten to one hundred million!” After Sharon left, Selena glared at Jack and asked.

“A wonder and efficacious medicine!” Jack smiled and said, “Honey, why did you follow me out? Were you worried that I’ll be kidnapped?”

Chapter 328

“Impossible. She could take you off my hands, no one cares. After all, you don’t need to worry about money if you leave with her! It’s good for you to get a fat wife too!” Selena was touched but did not want to admit it. She turned and walked toward the house.

She had no idea how any woman would confess and propose to Jack just after his few days of returning home. At first Selena thought she was the young rich woman who wore a mask and had a nice figure. If Jack had a relationship with the woman, would he abandon her and their daughter? She would be the biggest joke in the world. She had no idea that it would be the fat lady, Sharon George.

“Although she’s fat, she has a good foundation. It’ll be vital news when Sharon becomes a pretty lady three days later!” Jack smiled indifferently and quickly remembered something. He slapped his head and exclaimed, “Sh*t, I forgot to remind her to not tell anyone about how I helped her slim down. Will I be in trouble if she told people about it?”

“Those three pills are for her to slim down?!” Selena felt awkward. Sharon’s condition had been ongoing for many years. She had visited many doctors but they could not come up with a diagnosis and cure.

Many people called that a ‘strange disease’. Everybody felt that there was no way to cure her. Jack had only given her three pills and would that be the cure? She wondered if Jack was lying to Sharon. Selena then thought, the pills that Jack gave Sharon would not have any side effects even if it did not help her lose weight. After all, Jack was not stupid so he would not give her poison or harmful drugs.

“She had really left! It’s good that she left! Everything is fine as long as she’s not angry!” Fiona felt relieved when she saw Jack and Selena returned. “Although Sharon is chubby, she’s quite a beauty. Jack, you can really consider her. However, it’ll only work if she’s the second wife and addresses Selena as her elder sister!”

“Mother, you love money too much!” Selena was speechless and she glared at her mother.

“who doesn’t love money? We’ll be looked down on if we don’t have money, we can’t afford meat if we don’t have money, you’ll still need to pick up trash like you used to if we don’t have money. Kylie won’t

have the money to study in a normal kindergarten, let alone the kindergarten she's studying at now! Do you think money is not important? I've suffered so much from the lack of money these past five years. We enjoyed good food when we were in the Taylor family. Because of Jack, we had to..." Fiona started complaining and did not stop even after her daughter warned her.

Selena could only keep her mouth shut. She had no idea how long Fiona would complain if she did not stop her.

Finally, Selena looked at Jack and said "Jack, go have dinner. We've finished our meal!"

Soon, Sharon arrived home alone happily. However, every member of the George family was waiting for her at the door.

"Dad, mum..." Sharon felt something fishy about the atmosphere so she greeted timidly.

Chapter 329

"Follow us into the house!" Mister George said with a dark face.

Soon, Sharon and the others arrive at a very big living room.

"I heard that you confessed to somebody today? That person is a man who married into the wife's family and is a veteran, right? Not only that he's from a poor family, he has a wife and a child, right?" Mister George was extremely angry. His daughter had let him down and it was a stain on the George family's prestige.

Although it was humiliating, all could be forgiven if she succeeded. At least his daughter got a husband. However, Jack did not know Sharon so the possibility of Sharon failing her confession was huge. Their family would lose their face if she failed.

“Dad, I had no idea that you still care so much for me. You know about all the details!” Sharon lowered her head, secretly smiled and said.

“You...” Mister George was very angry when he saw his daughter smile. He glared at her. “Do you know that you have put us in shame because you confessed and asked someone from that family background to marry you. You’re not the only shameful one, us as a family is affected too!”

“Yes, Sharon. Your admirers come from nice families and you...prefer a soldier. Sigh, I have no idea what’s in your mind!” Sharon’s mother was so angry that she was speechless.

She almost fainted when she knew about this. Her daughter had no shame. The main concern was, her daughter had been gaining weight as days went by. If this did not stop, she was afraid that her daughter’s weight would hit 150 kilograms.

“Dad, mum, he’s a really nice man! Furthermore, it really doesn’t matter to be rejected. To keep the feelings to myself would have hurt more!” Sharon explained, “However, he’s a really nice man. Although he didn’t like me, he didn’t reject me in public. He asked my bodyguards and friends to leave before he suggested that we speak privately. That way, not only that I wasn’t publicly shamed, he honored me by speaking to me in private!” Sharon smiled and continued, “All of you don’t have to worry about me. Although I can’t be with such a nice man, I’m very grateful that I met a nice person like him! And I might meet someone suitable for me in the future!”

“Didn’t reject you in public? Asked others to leave first?” Mister George was relieved and confused at the same time. “It seems like Jack is a very nice person. He puts himself in other people’s shoes and cares about their feelings!”

“Oh yes, dad, mum. I won’t be leaving the house for three days. You guys shouldn’t go out too. Stay and look at how I slim down in three days! I’ll lose fifty kilograms in three days. This is what Jack told me. Who would’ve known that he was also a doctor!” Sharon smiled and sighed again. “Sigh, I really want to marry him. It would’ve been so good if he liked me too!”

“Fifty in three days? He must be a liar!” Mister George and his wife looked at each other and were speechless.

Chapter 330

"Liar? Impossible, I trust him!" Sharon smiled and continued, "I'll go up, take a bath, and sleep. Tomorrow morning, after I have breakfast, you can observe how I can lose my weight!" She walked toward the villa she stayed in after she spoke.

"We prepared your favourite, chicken thigh, cakes and other nice food. You don't want to have dinner?" Mister George looked at his daughter from the back and asked in disbelief.

A few days back, Sharon would have said that she was hungry and started eating and drinking to her heart's content. She actually said that she wanted to take a bath and sleep.

Sharon turned around and frowned. "That's weird. I don't feel hungry now. It's like I don't have any appetite!" She walked outside on her own after she finished speaking. She understood very well that this was the effect of Jack forcing the toxins out of her body.

"She's not hungry!" Every member of the George family opened their eyes widely as if they saw ghosts.

The members of the George family did not pay much attention to it. They went to bed after food. The next morning, Sharon woke up and had food. She did not eat much with only a glass of soya milk and two Chinese crullers. Sharon rested for a while after food before taking out the pill and was ready to swallow it.

"Wait, what's this medication? Who gave it to you? Is it from the soldier?" Mister George was surprised when he saw this and quickly asked about the details.

"Yes, he gave it to me. He said that this medication works well!" Sharon said with a smile.

"No! You can't take that!" Sharon did not expect Mister George to walk forward, slap her hand, and caused the pill to fall on the ground. He even stepped on it. "Why eat this? How can you eat medication

given by a soldier? You're the only heir of the George family. If you die, we'll be left with nothing!"

"Dad, why did you step on it?" Sharon almost cried out from anger when she saw the pill that had been crushed into powder. "I went through a lot of hardship to get this pill. Why... Why did you step on it!"

"Daughter, you can't take this medication!" Madam George stepped forward and said, "He's a mere soldier, not a doctor. How can you eat something from him? Who does he think he is? What should we do if anything happens to you?"

"Mother, he said that he's a doctor and he can recognize the reason for my illness! I only have this one chance. All other doctors failed to cure me!" Sharon stomped her foot in anger. "If I need to continue my life like this, I'd rather die. So, I have to try it. Besides, you know that he's a soldier that fights for Daxia. How will a person like him feed me poison?"

"But, this doesn't look like medication. The medication from the regular hospital comes in tablets and what he gave you not only looks like black like rats' defecate, it has a slight stink to it. I suspect it to be rats' defecate that he shaped into a ball!" Mister George said helplessly.

Sharon ignored them. She walked over and drank some water. She then took out another pill, placed it into her mouth and swallowed it before the others realized what she did.

"There's more!"

"Don't swallow!"

"Miss Sharon, it's dangerous. Let somebody else try it first!"

However, it was too late. Sharon had already swallowed the pill.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 331-335

Chapter 331

“I trust Jack!” Sharon looked at the others and said, “I believe in him and I can lose weight! Ouch, my stomach hurts! I need the toilet!” Sharon immediately covered her stomach and went looking to the toilet after speaking.

“How’s that possible? Stomach Ache? Oh no, does it have something to do with the medication? How can the medication act so fast!” Mister George was in fright. “Oh god, there must be something wrong with the pills. If not, why will my daughter’s stomach hurt? What should we do, what should we do?!”

“Let’s observe, it might be nothing!” Madam George thought about it and everybody soon waited outside the toilet.

“Oh, that’s much better!” Sharon came out from the toilet after some time. However, she started covering her stomach again after some time. “Why is this happening again? Why do I feel that I’m passing out water? Am I having diarrhea?”

Sharon walked toward the toilet again while leaning on the wall.

“Bastard, how is this medication? This must be croton!” Mister George was so angry that he held his hands in fists and his face turned red.

He only had a daughter and what should he do if something happened to her? Although she was slightly chubby, she was cute. Apart from that, how could he not love his only daughter!

“Luca, bring people to Jack’s house and bring everyone back here!” Mister George quickly ordered, “If anything happens to my daughter, I want them to die ugly!”

“Yes, master!” Luca Zucker immediately cupped his hands as a gesture of respect and left with a group of bodyguards.

Sharon came out twice but she went back into the toilet as soon she walked out the door. In the end, she remained seated on the toilet bowl and did not come out. This caused the others to worry and they had no idea what to do.

...

“Xena Jackson, how dare you come back here with my son?” At the house where Jack and the others stayed, Fiona looked at Xena, who came back with Ben, angrily.

“Mother, please don’t act this way. I think there must be some misunderstanding between us!” Xena lowered her head and mumbled out after a while.

“Yes mother, there must be some misunderstanding!” Ben immediately supported Xena and said.

“Misunderstanding? How can that be a misunderstanding? She was the one who worked together with the motor robbers and robbed me money! The motor robbers had already admitted to it!” Fiona looked at Xena angrily. She refused the 100 million from Neil but this three million was her only worth now.

How could Fiona calmed down when she thought about how the money was almost robbed away and they almost failed to take it back?

“I know those people but I didn’t tell them. They are misleading you!” Xena had an aggrieved expression.

Chapter 332

“Misled me? How have they wronged you?” Fiona frowned and asked suspiciously.

Xena waved her hand and said, “No, not wronged. They’re framing me on purpose. I didn’t work together with them. It happened like this, because we knew each other, they asked me about my

boyfriend's situation after we had drinks and said that I've found a poor guy!"

Xena quickly thought about it. "I was unhappy that they said that and replied that we are not poor. I said that you're rich and that you'll bank in an amount of more than three million tomorrow! I had several drinks and I told them everything as I was semi-conscious, so..."

Ben immediately said with a smile, "Father and mother, listen. I was right when I said that you have misunderstood Xena but you don't believe me!"

"Impossible, Jack said that he saw you when he followed them. On top of that, the motor robbers told us that you get a twenty percent of the cut!" Fiona still insisted. She walked forward and pushed Xena. "Shoo, get out! Taylor family doesn't want a daughter-in-law like you. We treated you so well but you're actually a bad person!"

"Mother, you have really misunderstood me. You cannot believe what one-sided story Jack told you!" Xena said while crying, "You know that Ben's sister doesn't like me so Jack, his brother-in-law dislike me too. How can you believe everything he said?"

Fiona started wondering what happened when she heard what Xena said. She looked at Xena's aggrieved expression and felt that she was not lying. Previously, Xena looked down on Jack and she had spoken out for their family many times. Hence, Jack might have a grudge toward Xena and was doing this to chase her away.

Xena was happy when she saw Fiona hesitating. She immediately went forward and said, "Mother, blame me for everything. I blame myself for telling what I told to those people after I got drunk. I was also drinking with them the second time you guys went to carry out the deposit. I told them everything because I was drunk and I wanted to show off that the Taylor family was rich and not poor people!"

"Mother, you've known Xena for a couple of years. She had been living with us when we were poor. You don't believe in what she says but you believe in Jack. He doesn't like Xena and he would have said anything to chase her away! Besides, I understand Xena, she's not that kind of woman." Ben spoke on behalf of Xena.

“My son wouldn’t have done that. Why would he wrong Xena?” Joan, who was by the side, could not continue to hear what they were saying and rebutted with a darkened expression, “I feel that Xena isn’t what she claims she is!”

“you’re Jack’s mother so it’s natural that you take his side.” Xena hugged her chest with both hands and said enigmatically, “However, I can understand. After all, no mother will help outsiders instead of their own son, but the truth is in front of you!”

Joan opened her mouth but had nothing to say. She was a peaceful person, how could she win a fight with somebody like Xena?

“Fine, fine. Let’s just let this issue go. It might really be a misunderstanding! By the way, Xena, you need to drink less and control your words. After all, misfortune comes from the mouth. Do you understand me?” Fiona looked at Xena, thought about it and said, “Oh yes, I heard that a lot of people died in the woods outside of the house yesterday. Is it possible that they were killed by Jack?”

Xena immediately said in surprise, “Really? No way! I had no idea. No wonder I couldn’t reach my friend’s via phone. Jack must have killed them to get the money back!”

Chapter 333

Xena paused and sighed before she continued speaking, “Sigh, Jack is too bloody and violent. He killed those people because of money. What will happen to us if we wronged him in the future? Will he also...” Xena did not continue but the meaning behind those words were clear to the others.

Fiona and Ben looked at each other and felt chill travel through their spines. It was true that Jack killed people for money and it was too much. If those people hit him, he could have just taught them a lesson. However, if they knew about the actual situation, that somebody pointed a gun at Jack, they would not have these thoughts.

“It’s true that Jack has a bad temper, he even hit Young Master Clark without any explanation! Luckily

Young Master Clark did not say anything because he was afraid about losing his honor if he told his family about it!" Ben frowned and smoked his cigarette. "Jack needs to control his temper. After all, this isn't the warfield.

At this moment, around a dozen cars stopped outside their house and a group of bodyguards came walking angrily toward them.

"Who're you? Are you looking for someone?" Fiona immediately stepped forward and asked. She wondered what was going on.

"Bring everyone here with us!" Luca ordered.

The bodyguards caught Fiona and the others, stuffing them into the car.

They left after they searched the house and made sure that there was nobody there.

Soon, everybody was brought into the living room of a villa and were brought in front of Mister George.

"This... Where are we?"

"Did you make a mistake?"

"We didn't do anything! Have you made a mistake?"

Fiona and the others were extremely afraid when they saw that extremely extravagant house.

"Our people won't make such low-level mistakes!" Mister George had a darkened expression on his face.

He looked at Ben and Xena before saying, "You two must be Jack and Selena, right? If anything happens to my daughter today, all of you here have to die with her!"

After hearing what he said, Fiona and the others were so frightened that their faces turned pale. Surely, the troublemaker Jack had caused trouble again.

"No, no, no... Boss! No, mister, you'd really made a mistake! I'm not Jack and she isn't Selena. My name is Ben and I'm Selena's brother. This is Xena, my girlfriend!"

"These two are my parents and this is Jack's mother!" Ben was so frightened that his voice was trembling. He continued his explanation, "Jack must be the one that offended you and your daughter. You only need to get him and I know where he is. Go catch him and it's fine for you to kill him too, but we're innocent!"

"You're his family!" Mister George smiled coldly and said, "Since you're his family, this isn't a mistake. If anything happens to my daughter, all of you have to die. Jack will suffer and regret if all you're dead!"

Chapter 334

When Andrew and Fiona heard that, they shook in fear. They did not expect the other party to think that way.

"Brother, please don't do that. You're after Jack. He's got nothing to do with us, just a stay-in son-in-law. Right, I haven't even acknowledged him as my son-in-law yet. I hate him very much. please let us go. We're innocent!" Fiona asked while chuckling.

"What's this place?" Xena looked around and felt that the place was too big. She had no idea which family it was, but it was definitely a lot richer than the Taylor family.

"He's the master of the George family!" One of the servants huffed. "Since you're caught, don't even think about getting out of here."

“George family! The first-class aristocratic family!” Xena gasped, totally at a loss for words. Why did Jack offend the George family?

She was really unlucky. If she knew this would happen, she should have just broken up with Ben. Her original plan was to get to know more rich folks through Ben. Not only did she not get her hands on the money, she had even gotten herself in trouble.

“Wait... Wait a minute. I remember now! Yesterday night, Miss George proposed to Jack. He didn’t offend her then, right? Mister George, what’s going on? Is Miss George angry? If that’s the case, it can be easily solved. I can help you persuade him to marry Miss George. That way we’ll be one big family! Let’s talk this out peacefully. There’s no need for violence!” Fiona was laughing apologetically while she was thinking of ways to kill Jack. The trouble he created was bringing trouble to all of them. What an annoyance.

“Humph, Jack is despicable. He gave my daughter three pills, claiming that it can help her lose weight and purge the toxins from her! However, my daughter is stuck in the toilet suffering from diarrhea ever since she ate the pill. If this goes on, she won’t be able to handle it! I suspect that Jack fed my daughter croton just to make my daughter purge.” Mister George was furious and spoke through gritted teeth, “He’s too vile. He can just reject my daughter if he doesn’t like her. Instead, he had others leave and ‘treated’ my daughter. I have a feeling that he’s intentionally toying with my daughter to mock her!”

After that, he thought again and said, “Tell me, where’s that son of a b*tch working now? I’ll send someone to bring him here! You’re his family, don’t even think of escaping!”

“Mister George, we’ll tell you where he’s working. Can you just let us go, please? They’re Jack’s family since Selena and Jack were legally married after all. This matter is made known to the entire Eastfield. However, I’m different. I’m only Ben Taylor’s girlfriend. I’m innocent. I’m not even remotely related to Jack!” Xena denied all ties with them with a pleading look.

The thought that Xena was still calling her mother and denouncing her when trouble comes had enraged Fiona and Andrew.

“Mister George, please let her go. She’s just my girlfriend and can’t be considered part of our family yet!” Ben helped to beg for mercy after taking a good long look at Xena.

After all, if the other party was angry and wanted to kill them, it would be best to save as many lives as possible.

“Ben, I miss you too, but I’m not considered as part of your family yet as I’m not married to you. I’m so sorry!” Xena looked at Ben with a grateful look on her face.

“That’s fine. You’re right, you’ve yet to marry into the family!” Ben put on a painful smile. Although he said those words, he felt slightly dejected.

Chapter 335

“Stop your drama. I said none of you will be spared!” Mister George smiled sinisterly and said, “Where are Jack and Selena working at? Out with it, or I’ll kill you right now!”

Fiona was scared, but at the thought of her own daughter, she managed to grit her teeth and replied, “Mister George, please let us go. We never thought Jack would feed your daughter weird medicine. He’s done it without any of us knowing. We’re innocent.”

“Tell me now. Where are they working?” Mister George appeared to have lost his patience. He grabbed Fiona by her collar and asked her angrily.

“Let go of my wife!” Andrew immediately rushed forward.

Unfortunately, Mister George sent him to the ground with a single kick. The bodyguards had also come forward and surrounded him.

“Tell me!” Mister George glared at Fiona. “If you don’t tell me, I’ll kill you right now!”

At that moment, Fiona was really terrified, answering nervously, “J...Jack is working as a bodyguard at the Drake family. Can I not say where my daughter is working? You should be looking for Jack!”

“The Drake family!” Upon hearing that, Mister George was stunned momentarily. If that was the case, then things would be quite troublesome.

Although Jack was just a bodyguard of the Drake family, they still had to respect the status of his employer. To go and capture him would piss off the Drake family, what could he do? However, after some consideration, he decided that it would be fine. He could just pay some money to the Drake family to compensate for their loss and have them hand him over. After all, his daughter should be worth more than a bodyguard of the Drake family. For that matter, he believed that the Drake family would understand.

At the same time, another old man from the George family took out a gun and pointed it at Xena’s head. “Tell me where Selena’s working at. Otherwise I’ll shoot you right now!”

“I’ll tell you, I’ll tell you! She’s working under one of the Drake family’s businesses, what’s that again, Dragon Dynasty Real Estate! She’s working there as a manager of the purchasing department!” Xena’s legs were shaking in fear as she blurted it all out.

The other party finally kept his gun while Xena slumped to the ground with her forehead drenched in cold sweat.

“Master, this is a little difficult. Jack is just a mere bodyguard. It should be easy to capture him!

“However, Selena is working at their real estate company as a manager. If we get her, that would disrespect the Drake family. If that happens, the Drake family will be angered!” Luca advised Mister George after some thoughts.

“Yes, that’s right. The Drake family favors my daughter greatly. Although she’s only a manager, her monthly salary is at one million dollars. They really like my daughter. If you go for my daughter, you’ll

offend the Drake family!” Fiona’s eyes brightened. She took a few steps forward and exclaimed fearfully.

“Let’s do it this way. We’ll respect the Drake family and forget about Selena. As for Jack, we’ll get him. However, we can’t go for him in the Drake Residence. Find some people and have them hide outside. Have them capture him the moment he leaves the Drake Residence!” Mister George finally instructed after some considerations.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 336-340

Chapter 336

Both Fiona and Andrew heaved an internal sigh of relief when they heard their daughter was not kidnapped. Still, they were furious, knowing that they could not escape the inevitable. It was all Jack’s fault. Never mind that he did not like Sharon; he actually used crotons to swindle her and told her it was some slimming medicine. The poor girl was suffering from diarrhea, still.

“I’ll take my leave now, Sir.” Luca gave a fist-and-palm salute before he swiftly left the scene. He knew Jack was a bodyguard and surmised he was a skilled fighter, so he went around finding other good fighters to recruit. Only then did he leave for the Drake family’s place of residence.

Joan internally sighed. She had pretty much anticipated everything Fiona and the others had done. However, she did not stand up for the sake of her son. She knew it was useless, even if she explained everything on his behalf. Besides, she had the utmost faith that her son would not be so stupid as to feed Sharon crotons. Her son was not someone like that; he would not prank someone even if he did not like them.

“Oh, much better!” Finally, after what seemed like an eternity, Sharon finally emerged from the toilet, cold sweat rolling down her forehead.

“Dear, how are you? Are you okay?” Her parents immediately asked when they saw her come out, worry etched onto their expressions.

“I’m fine. I’m in good spirits, actually. I just sh*t a lot!” Sharon flashed an awkward smile. She then

noticed the bodyguards before her, as well as Fiona and the others. “Mom, Dad, who are they?”

“Oh, they’re the parents-in-law of that punk, Jack White. I just took them here since they’re his family. Luca is now looking for him. Unfortunately, that punk is working as a bodyguard for the Drake family, so it’s wise for us to not apprehend him right away. I told Luca and his other comrades to wait at the entrance. They’ll catch him once he gets off from work! That Jack actually dared to feed you crotons, giving you a stomach ache,” the head of the George family spoke. “Hmph. I’ll definitely teach him a lesson once we get him!”

Sharon immediately saw red. “Mom, Dad, what are you two going on about?” she barked immediately. “Jack only gave me slimming pills. I believe him. He told me that I’ll be able to lose 15 kilos within a day!” After she said that, she turned toward the bodyguards. “Just release them already and see them off,” she ordered. “Also, tell Luca to come back. Jack is a doctor. He’s probably a lot better than those western doctors in hospitals.”

The bodyguards looked at their masters, not moving a single inch.

When Fiona and the others heard this, confusion crossed their expressions. Jack? A doctor? They would never believe that in a million years. Sure, Jack had some knowledge on how to treat bones after being on the battlefield for so many years as a military man, and he managed to heal Andrew’s leg. Nonetheless, that did not mean he was qualified to help Sharon lose weight. Furthermore, healing a leg and losing weight were two completely different issues.

“That’s right! Jack definitely gave slimming pills. Mr. George, there’s a misunderstanding. Please let us go!” Xena reacted first as she cried out immediately.

All she wanted was to leave this place, and she would leave Eastfield at once. She would flourish wherever she went. Even if the head of the George family realized something was amiss afterward, it would be too late by then.

“I can’t let them go. I can’t verify if your body will have complications later! You were in the toilet for a long time just now. You must have eaten crotons. Look at you! You look so gaunt. I think you’ve gotten a little thinner!” The head of the George family observed his daughter and noticed she had looked a bit

thinner. His heart clenched at the sight.

Chapter 337

“I look thinner?” Sharon’s eyes immediately brightened. “Quick! Get me a weighing scale. Jack did say that I’d lose 15 kilos within a day. Let me measure my weight and see if the medicine really is effective!” she sobbed. “Oh my goodness, don’t tell me that I’ll see results already!”

Sharon felt happiness surging through her body. If she had indeed lost weight, it would make her day.

Not long after, two bodyguards carried an extremely large weighing scale to her.

Sharon immediately stood on it. “I just weighed myself the day before,” she said. “I was 106 kilos then. Who knows if I’ve really lost weight!” After she said this, she noticed the numbers. “Oh my goodness! I’m only 101.5 kilos now!” she abruptly burst in joy. “I just lost 4.5 kilos within moments. This is amazing!”

“No way. You really lost weight?” Mr. and Mrs. George exchanged glances, utterly astonished. The most she had been inside the toilet was probably an hour, and their daughter’s weight had really gone down.

“Seriously?” Joan was the first to rush over. She looked at the numbers as well. She was so moved that her eyes began to brim with tears. “I knew that my son wouldn’t cheat anyone. He’s no swindler, you can count on that. Since he said that it’d help Miss George to lose weight, he’d keep his words for sure!”

“Really? That’s fantastic!” Fiona was so ecstatic that she was practically dancing. From the looks of it, she almost burst into a square dance in front of everyone.

“Mr. George, since this isn’t a scam and that your daughter is fine, can we leave?” Andrew heaved another internal sigh of relief. The events just now had given them a shock of their lives.

“No way!” Mr. George’s instant reply caught them off-guard. “We don’t know the entire situation now. Who knows what medicine you’ve eaten? What if it has side effects? What if this weighing scale isn’t

accurate? Who can say! Besides, what if something happens to my daughter again after we let you go? At any rate, we'll wait until everything has settled down and verified before releasing all of you!"

"That's right! No one can leave right now. A medicine that miraculous must have some side effects!" Mrs. George chipped in as well.

Fiona and the others were rendered speechless for a moment. All they could do was pray that this medicine from Jack was truly effective and had no side effects.

"Right. What if this scale isn't accurate?" Sharon thought about it for a while before prompting them, "Get me another scale. I'm scared that this one isn't accurate!"

"Yes, Young Miss!" The two bodyguards immediately ran off.

The minute they left, Sharon's expression contorted once more. Clutching her stomach, she scurried to the toilet.

"She—she still needs to go!" Mr. George fell into a state of panic. If this went on, she could collapse from exhaustion.

After a while, the two bodyguards found another weighing scale. They waited outside. This time, Sharon only emerged from the toilet when it was nearing noon. She looked as though she had lost a lot of weight.

"My goodness. Her skirt is so much looser. She lost weight again. We can see that she really lost weight this time!" Fiona was extremely excited. Thank the gods; they were truly saved this time.

Chapter 338

"She's grown thinner! She's definitely grown thinner!" Mrs. George was extremely excited as well. This

was practically a miracle.

“I’ll weigh myself and see!” Sharon could no longer contain her excitement. She immediately hopped onto the first weighing scale. She took a sharp intake of breath when she weighed herself. “My goodness, I’m only 97.5 kilos now. It’s unbelievable! I lost another 4 kilos. I still lost 4 kilos even if this scale isn’t working!”

“So you must’ve grown thinner!” Mr. George looked very pleased. He observed his daughter, noting that aside from the sweat filming over her body, she seemed to be in high spirits. Thus, it looked like there would be no complications for now.

Sharon excitedly ran over to the other weighing scale and observed the numbers, and soon after, she leaped in joy. “Mom, Dad, come over here and take a look. The numbers are the same! I’m 97.5 kilos. It’s amazing!”

97.5 kilos was probably far too heavy for other girls. They would probably feel that this was far from an occasion to celebrate. It was not a number that would make them happy. Still, these figures made Sharon extremely elated. She always wanted to lose weight; she would be happy for the entire day even if it was only one kilo. That dream had felt like wishful thinking to her before today.

“A total of 8.5 kilos already. 8.5! And it’s only noontime. Who knows if you’ll really be able to lose 15 by tonight!” A maid was extremely elated as well. She had always watched over and tagged after Sharon. She knew the amount of abuse and shame she had received from others throughout these two, three years.

“Mom, Dad, see? What did I tell you? Jack would never lie to me! He was a soldier, sure, but he’s also a doctor. And he’s a miracle doctor to me!” Sharon’s expression was radiating with nothing but joy. A thought then occurred to her as she added, “Aren’t you going to release them already?”

“Sharon, aren’t you worried that there’ll be side effects? Why don’t we wait till nighttime and see if your body is truly free from complications? I won’t just release them then; I’ll treat them to a nice meal! I’m just preventing the worst-case scenario from happening, all right?”

Mr. George continued, smiling, "Come, give them seats and prepare refreshments for them. They're my guests now. If my daughter truly turns out to be fine, I'll definitely express my thanks!"

Delight sparked in Fiona when she heard that Mr. George would 'express his thanks'. From the looks of it, it was ridiculously obvious that Sharon was losing weight. If Jack truly was skilled in medicine and could truly treat Sharon's strange illness, then everything would be perfect. Never mind if Mr. George did not give them money; it was an honor of its own if he treated them to dinner. If they could create good relations with the George family, they would not have to worry so much in the future. They would have another family to rely on.

Following this train of thought, Fiona immediately spoke up, chuckling, "Pardon us then. Oh dear, we never thought that this son-in-law of ours would be well-versed in medicine as well. He's probably met some skilled doctor and learned quite a bit from him while he was in the army!"

Resentment filled Joan's chest. When they initially heard that they were going to be killed, Fiona and the others felt so hateful that they were ready to immediately cut off all ties with Jack. They even went on to say he was an outsider in their family. Now that the situation was in their favor, not only did she call him her son-in-law, but she said it so easily!

"Oh no. My—my stomach. It hurts again!" After Sharon rested for a while, she suddenly clutched her stomach. Yet happiness danced in her eyes. "I think I'm going to lose weight again!"

"Hah! Go on, go on!" Mrs. George could not help but smile. She was not so worried this time around.

...

At the Drake family's residence, Jack had just arrived and was prepared to do his work. He never expected that Kyle and a few other bodyguards would meet him once he stepped through the doors.

Chapter 339

Jack frowned when he saw that it was Kyle. "Sir. Don't tell me you want to challenge me again."

“No way. You’re way stronger than I am. I’ve got better things to do than to challenge you to a fight I’ll lose.” Kyle chuckled and stepped forward, offering a cigarette to Jack. “Come on now, Jack. We’ve already thought it through—you’ll be the big brother of the Drake family’s bodyguards from now on. And as our big brother, the rest of us bodyguards will listen to you!”

Jack did not take the cigarette; he took out his own White-Sand cigarette instead. “I only smoke cigarettes from this brand,” he said, smiling. “I’m not used to your premium cigarettes!”

Kyle had felt extremely awkward when Jack had actually declined the cigarette. It embarrassed him as the squad leader. However, he never expected Jack’s explanation. It made the awkwardness dissipate in an instant.

He smiled and slipped the cigarette between his teeth instead. “You’re quite unique, Jack. Even your hobbies are a lot more special than ours.”

“Whatever you like. Just call me whatever you want to call me!” Jack stretched his limbs, thinking for a moment. “But, since you’re already calling me Big Brother, then you better perform well in the future!”

“Of course!” Kyle professed as he pounded his chest.

“All right then!” Jack nodded and went inside.

He went to the living room, located on the first floor of Tanya’s villa. At the moment, she was drinking tea with her cousin, Yvonne. Yvonne was dressed in a black midi dress that just happened to cover her knees today. With her fair skin tone, this contrast made her look even more attractive; an air of elegance and allurements clouding her. The smile on her face instantly vanished when she saw Jack entering. Anger boiled in her once she recalled what had happened yesterday, when that punk had seen something he should not have seen.

Alas, Tanya had specifically told her that Jack might have a special connection to the Goddess of War and that the Drake family still needed to be on his good side. This sparked even more hateful thoughts

in Yvonne. She wanted nothing more than to break him and destroy him for good.

'No way. I can't just let this slide. I need to think of a way to put him in his place. I'll never be satisfied otherwise!' Yvonne thought about it for a while, then she thought of something. She grinned at her cousin. "Tanya, I haven't been to Gemstone Street in such a long time. Why don't we walk around there today?"

"Sure. I haven't gone shopping in a while. Let's go!" Tanya immediately agreed.

"Then should we bring your personal bodyguard along? After all, no way we can go there without a bodyguard. A lot of rich people go there, but there are plenty of pickpockets in places like that. Moreover, it gets quite chaotic there!" Yvonne then cast a glance toward Jack. The implicit message in her words was clear.

"All right. We won't bring anyone else but him then. He's worth a few dozen men alone!" Tanya replied, smiling.

"A few dozen? You underestimate me!" Jack flashed a mirthless smile and added, "I'm worth a thousand if all I'm facing are grunts!"

Chapter 340

"What a boast! As if you're a god of war yourself." Jack's words made Yvonne roll her eyes. She would probably believe it if a bodyguard of the Drake family was worth a hundred men, but 'worth a thousand men' was pushing it.

"Let's go. It's getting a little late now. The earlier the better when it comes to choosing gambling rocks. Otherwise, someone with a good eye for them might take the good ones!" Tanya said, smiling.

Yvonne was taken aback for a moment. "Oh? Looks like you know quite a bit about this, Tanya," Yvonne praised her.

Tanya merely rolled her eyes heatedly. "I learned everything from you, okay? You're such a nut for these gambling rocks, always bringing me out to Gemstone Street. I've been there so many times already, so of course I know all these basic things!"

The duo chatted away as they walked to the center of the courtyard outside the mansion.

"Oh, right. Do you know anything about this, Jack?" Tanya turned to ask her bodyguard when she noticed he had not said a word.

Yvonne interrupted them before he could even open his mouth. "Him? Hmph. He's a military man. I even heard that he was a delivery boy before. Do you truly think that he knows anything about gambling rocks, a pastime of the rich and the affluent? Something like this is way out of his league. How could he have ever come across it?"

"I'm just asking. What if he knows something?" Tanya rebutted, an awkward smile on her face as she did so.

"Something like that is truly a rich person's pastime. A regular family would never have the means to dabble in it." Jack's lips curled into a wry smile. He opened the door of Tanya's sportscar when they reached it. "Basically, gambling rocks are a gamble on the inside of a rock," he said. "A single cut will make or break you. Once you've set your sights on the correct item, there might be a gemstone that will turn you into an instant millionaire. Of course, you'll lose out if you chose the wrong rock!"

"Not bad. I never thought that you'd hear of our saying 'a single cut will make or break you'."

Yvonne gave a humorless smile. She opened the car door and slid into the backseat. "Let's go," she said. "I'll help you broaden your horizons today. I'm the number one rock dealer in the gambling rock world. I can make a few million within a month with some luck; even 10 million and more isn't a problem!"

"You only make 10 million, and you call yourself the number one rock dealer?" Jack gave a humorless smile as he drove, his head shook in dissatisfaction.

“Hmph. As if you’ve such a fantastic eye. I don’t know about other places, but I’m telling you that I really am the number one rock dealer in Eastfield.” Yvonne chuckled and lifted her chin slightly, pride in her posture.

“He’s out. Jack is out, but he’s with Miss Tanya. It’s not a good time to capture him!” Among the cars parked at the opposite of the Drake family’s villa, Luca happened to be sitting in one of them.

He initially planned that he would wait until Jack got off from work, and he would then exit the main entrance before capturing him. Even if the Drake family was to launch an investigation of their own in the future, Jack would no longer be alive. He was just a bodyguard. Furthermore, they did not directly kidnap him from the Drake family’s residence. As long as they gave some money, there was no way the Drake family would not agree to them. They never thought that they would see Jack driving out after not waiting too long, with two beautiful women in tow.

“Of course we can’t get him while he’s with Miss Tanya. What if something happens to her on her way back after we take Jack? We’ll be in serious trouble then!” Luca considered their predicament for a while. Then, he told his subordinates, “Never mind. Let’s just wait here. We’ll get him when he gets off from work in the afternoon—when he’s alone!”

Yet on another side, a black Audi was secretly following the sports car Jack was driving from a distance. There was a bodyguard in the Audi.

“Don’t get too close. It’ll be troublesome if that punk finds out we’re here. He’s a very skilled fighter!” he warned the driver.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 341-345

Chapter 341

“Don’t worry, I’m an experienced driver. It won’t be easy to notice me!” The bodyguard driving the car flashed a wane smile and added, “Aren’t you curious why Young Master Hugo and Young Master Clark asked us to follow Jack and check the places he’s going to? And if he’s going to purchase anything expensive?”

The bodyguard beside him tacked on, "I think it's like this. I heard Jack had promised he'd prepared a gift worth over 10 million dollars for the old head of the Taylors' 70th birthday, right in front of the entire Taylor family! This 10-million gift is something extremely luxurious, and not even aristocrats can just frown upon it."

"Oh. So the two Young Masters want us to see what he buys. Is that it?" guessed the bodyguard driving the car.

"They want to see if he actually buys a gift, and we'll steal it from him if he does have enough money to buy such a gift. Then, when he can't afford such an expensive gift or he actually buys the gift but can't bring it out, he'll be kicked out of the Taylors! The daughter of the Taylor family will then divorce him, and the two Young Masters will have a chance with her!" the other bodyguard explained.

Very soon, Jack parked the car and walked Gemstone Street along with the beautiful Tanya and gorgeous Yvonne. This particular street—with its stalls for gambling rocks—was not just long, but it was quite famous in the country. Proprietors of gambling rocks from a few nearby cities would come here to look at the goods here, too.

"Oh my. Isn't that the beautiful Miss Yvonne? Long time no see! Where have you been all this time? Come over and have a look! There are quite a few potential gems in this lot—I feel it in my bones. Come over and buy to try your luck, Miss Yvonne!" An old man manning a stall by the roadside called out to Yvonne right after they took just a few steps in the streets.

Elation sparked in Yvonne. She was immediately recognized as soon as she stepped into the street. Was this not an evident indicator she was truly the number one rock dealer?

"All right. I'll have a look!" Yvonne bent over and carefully scoured through the pile of rocks.

"Oh my. Yvonne Drake! I never thought that I'd see you here!" No one expected to hear a familiar voice ring out at that moment. It was Michael Wilson, the Young Master of the Wilson family, with a few bodyguards accompanying him. They appeared before Jack.

“Michael Wilson!” Yvonne stood upright once she saw that it was Michael. She dusted her hands before speaking, “Long time no see. How much money have you...invested in these rocks this month?”

The corners of Michael’s mouth twitched when he heard this. He did enjoy gambling rocks, but he had lost plenty of money on this pastime. Yvonne reveled in making fun of him with this information.

However, Michael quickly managed a smile. “That was before, Yvonne. Now I’m much more knowledgeable in the art of choosing rocks. This month, not only have I not lost money, but I’ve earned 2.3 million up to this date!”

“So little! What’s there to be proud of?” Yvonne retorted, a grin on her face as she did so.

Michael’s gaze sidled toward Jack, and a spark of envy twinged in his chest. Both Tanya and Yvonne were beauties of the Drake family. One was as lively and adorable as a fairytale princess, the other a vixen who was unabashedly seductive. Who knew Jack would be so lucky to be a bodyguard for the Drake family and had gotten the chance to accompany two breathtaking ladies.

“Miss Tanya, it’s such a busy place with so many people—and the chaos! And you only brought one bodyguard with you? Never mind that; a bodyguard who has only worked for a few days to boot? Aren’t you afraid that someone will try to steal something from you?” Michael spoke with a cold smile on his face.

“Don’t worry, Young Master Wilson. Nothing will happen to Miss Tanya while I’m around, so don’t worry about her!” Jack replied.

Chapter 342

“I wouldn’t worry if I were you. I trust in Jack’s fighting prowess!” Tanya replied, a smile gracing her face as she did.

She paid no more attention to that fat b*stard, Michael Wilson, and studied the rocks laid upon the mat before her instead. Her eyes brightened in an instant as she picked one. “Hmm. This rock doesn’t look

too bad,” she commented. “It’s big and square, and there are hints of jadeite on its surface. Not bad at all!”

“You have a good eye, young lady. This piece is certainly promising. And look at its color—that’s the key. It’s such a clear and crystalline green. As a matter of fact, I’m reluctant to sell it off myself. I really want to give it a try as well. Alas, I’ve been short of money recently, so I don’t dare to gamble my luck!” The old man chuckled and thrust his palm forward, splaying his five fingers. “No need to weigh this. I’ll just give you an estimate of its value. I might lose out too much if I weigh it, after all. The price will be 500 thousand dollars; only then will I sell it off. I’ll just be running a loss if it turns out to be a fantastic gem once you break it apart! I’ll lose out on a lot if there’s a nice, pretty jade inside!”

Michael also peeked at the rock; it did seem rather promising. ‘What if he struck the jackpot this time and obtained a good gem once it was cut open?’ he thought. His reputation would grow exponentially! Besides, Yvonne always poked fun at him. This was a golden opportunity to prove himself!

He grabbed the rock instantly and studied it carefully. “It looks pretty good!”

Yvonne studied the rock as well. “It does seem promising from the surface, but it’s still a little too expensive,” she spoke after careful deliberation. “I’ll be running a loss if there’s nothing inside. 500 thousand is too much, my good sir. The most it’ll be worth is one hundred thousand if you actually weighed it according to standard operating procedure.”

“Hah. You lack boldness!” Young Master Wilson simply chuckled. Yvonne did not have that much money, so she was more careful on using them. This was evidently a chance for him to show off.

However, he was not one to simply throw his money away either. He smiled and spoke to the old man, “500 thousand is a little too expensive. Lower it to 400 thousand and I’ll buy it. I’ll gamble on this rock. My luck has been pretty good lately. I’ll probably make quite a bit of money with this!”

A few passers-by crowded over when they overheard the exchange.

The old man pondered upon the offer for a while. "All right then. 400 thousand it is. I've not opened up shop for today. Let's take this as the opening ceremony then!"

"All right. I'll transfer the money to you immediately. Can you help me open it up?" Young Master Wilson grinned, his heart skipping in delight. The rock looked promising from its surface. Even if only a quarter of it was jade, then not only would he avoid a loss, but he would earn some money as well. If more than half of it turned out to be jade, then he would make a pretty sum.

"You want it opened now?" The old man was slightly surprised. This request required a huge amount of courage. After the purchase, some people would take it home and mull it over before actually opening it. Moreover, they might feel that there was no guarantee of a gem inside and think of a way to sell it off.

Of course, there were others who cut it open to gauge the situation after taking the rock back. If it was in a good condition, the rock's worth would increase exponentially. Here, they could choose to cut it open entirely or sell it out at an even higher price to secure profit.

"Just cut it! I won't be running a loss if even a little jade is revealed!" Michael said confidently.

Jack could not suppress a grin when he saw the other man paying the agreed price. Who knew that his smile would be caught by Michael?

The young master's expression darkened. "What are you smiling at, you punk? Take a good look. I can buy something worth 400 thousand just like that. This is a gambling rock—something that's not for the likes for poor b*stards like you!"

"You just threw away your money for a plain rock, and you didn't even break a sweat. You truly are rich!" Jack bit back, a humorless smile on his face.

"As if you know anything. Shut up! Just look at it. It looks nothing like a plain rock. Can't you see the beautiful coloring on its surface?" Michael's mood soured in an instant. If it was a plain rock, that meant that there was nothing inside but rock. It would be just like a gold-plated necklace, with the precious

mineral only lining the surface.

Chapter 343

Needless to say, Jack's words displeased Michael.

"Hmph. If you don't believe it, just take a look at it for yourself once it's cut open! But I'd advise you to take it back before cracking it open. You'll at least be less embarrassed that way!" Jack chuckled.

"What a joke. You're just a soldier. What do you know about this? I'd only dare gamble on this rock after studying it carefully. You're standing two meters away, looking at it from a distance. How would you know it's just a rock?" Michael gave a mirthless chuckle. "I think you just despise rich people. You're spouting nonsense because you want to see me play the fool!"

"That's right. People these days are so weird. Cursing others just because they can't stand them having more money!"

"That's right. How would he know anything about this anyway? They're worlds apart. How would he know more than a young master of a wealthy family?"

Quite a few of the bystanders began whispering among themselves as they made fun of Jack.

"Young Master Wilson, which section should we cut open first? Should we just cut a small part first, or...?" The owner of the stall called for his two apprentices, and they set the rock upon the cutting machine.

"We'll cut it open from this side!" Young Master Wilson shot Jack a vicious glare. "I don't believe that I won't see a hint of green when it's cut from this side!" he said to the old man.

"That's right. This rock is anything but a plain old rock!" The old man glared at Jack as well. "Don't speak

nonsense if you don't know anything," he said. "Talking as if you're very knowledgeable. If you're that smart, buy one for yourself and prove that you have a good eye!"

Jack glanced over the rocks on the floor. "Not a single one of these rocks from your stall are worth anything," he said unexpectedly. "I'm not an idiot. Why should I buy them?"

The boss was so frustrated that he almost spat blood. That stupid punk deserved to die! How dare he claim that not a single rock from his stall was worth anything. He was ruining his business and reputation.

"You—" The old man was so furious that he merely shrugged Jack off. "What does a person like you know? Just cut it open. We'll teach him a lesson or two. I don't believe that there'll be nothing once this side is cut!"

"All right, Master!" The two apprentices cut into the rock from one side, splitting it straightaway.

The crowd immediately surged forward. Young Master Wilson, especially, rushed forward impatiently. He took the rock; his expression instantly turned stormy. "No way. There's not a single hint of jade! I don't believe it... Cut it open from this side!" the unsatisfied Michael barked.

The two apprentices quickly cut the rock from another side. After it was cut, Michael was rendered speechless; there was nothing on this side either.

"It—It really is plain rock!" a member of the crowd spoke up in surprise, features twisted in shock. This meant that that man's guess was correct.

Chapter 344

"Young Master Wilson, looks like your 400 thousand dollars have gone into the drain this time." When Yvonne noticed all color leeching instantly from Michael's face, she burst into cackles. She was not a fan of Michael Wilson. The level of Michael being fond of women was horrendously unacceptable.

There was a time when Yvonne walked on the pavement, and Michael stared at her thighs multiple times. There was even one time when this guy walked behind her on purpose; he pretended to fall forward and grabbed her butt. These incidents left its mark in Yvonne's heart that she could feel the annoyance wrenching within her at that moment.

If Yvonne was not part of the Drake family or Tanya's beloved cousin, Michael might even do something more immoral and unscrupulous to her! Seeing Michael scammed made her see fireworks. The most important thing was that Jack, a gambling rock layman, could even guess it right. This situation for Young Master Wilson was definitely like a huge slap landed on his face, severely and harshly. What a shame!

The young master merely laughed it off "It's only 400 thousand. It's not like I can't afford to lose it!" Young Master Wilson responded with a wry smile on his face. Although exasperation thrummed through his vein, he winded down instantly to uphold his reputation.

"You're pretty good, Jack. You knew this was plain rock just by taking a look!" Tanya praised Jack for his ability to differentiate the gambling rocks, a gentle smile on her feature.

"Thank you. I just happen to know a little about these," Jack replied with a humble smile.

"You know about stones? I think you were just lucky to guess it correctly!" Michael smiled icily with a mocking expression on his face. "If you really know these stones, buy one. Cut it open and we'll have a look!" he snarkily commented. "If you could get a good one, I'll admit that you're capable!"

Once the last syllabus of Michael's word dropped, Yvonne immediately stepped forward and proposed, "Michael Wilson, how about you compete against me? We'll each choose one rock, and we'll see whose is more valuable!"

"Sure. I can compete with you. But what is a competition when there's no bet? If no bet is involved, why should I compete with you?" Michael egged her on.

Yvonne truly wanted to shame Michael in front of others. After giving some thoughts to the matter, she

smiled and said, "Bet? Sure, why not! How about this: If you lose the bet, you kneel before me and bark like a dog!"

The corners of Michael's mouth twitched aggressively at Yvonne's words. This woman was too much. How could she ask him, a young master from a second-class aristocratic family, to kneel down and bark like a dog if he lost? If he really lost the competition, would it not be a shame to the Wilson family?

He stole glances at the enchanting and seductive figure of Yvonne; he could not help but move. "You're definitely mean and cruel. Alright, as you wish! But if you lose the bet, you'll make out with me for three minutes and I can touch and rub anywhere I want for a minute. How about that?"

"Dream on!" Yvonne felt a flash of irritation after hearing his suggestion.

"Well, then forget it!" Michael shrugged his shoulders, acting nonchalantly. "It's not that I don't want to bet with you, but you yourself forfeited!"

"If you don't mind, I do have a suggestion. We don't have to play this big. How about each of you pick one rock of a similar size, and if anyone loses, he or she will pay the bill for the other party," Jack proposed after some thoughts. He then continued, "Of course, the rock will belong to whoever picks it!"

"Hmmm. It's not a bad idea! Now what? Michael Wilson, would you dare to bet with me?" Yvonne asked with brightly shining eyes.

"Why not? I'm not afraid of you! Let's pick a rock from this old man!" Michael pointed at the old man's gambling rock stall.

"What? There's no good rock here. Only one or two of them are, but they barely pass the satisfactory level!" Jack smiled bitterly. He, the supreme warrior, knew a lot more than others. Rock-betting was as easy as breathing for him.

Chapter 345

“How would you know any of these rocks aren’t of good quality? You didn’t even take a close look on them! Besides, you’re just a layman, so what do you know?” The old man who owned the gambling rocks stall reprimanded Jack. He was so livid that he wanted to choke Jack to death. Was this punk here to ruin his business and reputation?

“Shut up if you don’t know anything about gambling on rocks!” Yvonne rolled her eyes at Jack and squatted down to pick her rock.

After a while, she picked up one rock. “This is it,” she exclaimed. “This rock isn’t bad at all!”

Michael’s brows furrowed. He was not confident in this game as he knew Yvonne was more experienced than he was in this area, though he believed his ability to tell a good rock improved so much lately. Michael wandered between a few rocks for several times and eventually picked a rock of similar size. “This rock is it!”

Jack silently looked at both rocks chosen and approached Yvonne.

“Miss Yvonne, I suggest you change yours. Although your piece looks good from this angle, you’ll find that it’s not as Young Master Wilson’s once you cut it open,” Jack reasoned.

“Impossible!” Nevertheless, how could Yvonne believe his words? With a stern glance, she replied, “What do you know? From my years of experience, my rock is definitely of better quality than Young Master Wilson’s!”

“Miss Yvonne, although Jack is a nonprofessional in this area, sometimes the words from his filthy mouth are quite accurate! What if he’s right this time? Then I’ll win!” Michael commented without hiding any hint of happiness over his face.

“Hmph! I don’t believe I’ll lose to you!” Yvonne countered angrily.

“I’ll weigh these two rocks and quote you according to the current market price. It’ll be 10 thousand dollars per 500 gram!” spoke the stall owner.

“Not a problem!” Michael and Yvonne agreed instantaneously. This was indeed the market price.

After weighing the rocks, the rock belonging to Yvonne was around 7.55 kilograms whereas Michael’s weighed around 7.75 kilograms. They weighed almost the same.

“Let’s calculate it on the basis of 20 thousand per kilogram, it’ll be a total of 300 thousand dollars! Whoever loses the game will pay for it!” The old man said with a smile on his face. No matter who won the bet today, he would still have a huge profit out of it!

This was especially for the one that Young Master Wilson opened it earlier on. The old man planned to open it before that. He thanked his lucky stars that he did not open it but instead sold it to this Young Master Wilson. Otherwise, he would have lost 400 thousand dollars. The old man thanked God multiple times for that.

“All right!” Yvonne felt so sure of herself that she handed the rock confidently to one of the apprentices of the lapidary. “Cut mine first!” she spoke.

Not long after, the rough piece of Yvonne’s was cut open. Yvonne’s pallor was deathlike, looking at the content of the rock. There was a little jade inside the rock, but it was way too little, just a thin layer in it. Even if this rock was processed and polished into jade, it would only worth 10 thousand dollars or so. The fact that a rock worth 150 thousand became a pitiable 10 thousand pierced right through Yvonne’s heart, and she felt it bleed. The most atrocious thing was that she was on an unfavorable side. If she lost, she would have to pay 300 thousand dollars!

“Jack, if I lose, it’s all because you jinxed me!” Yvonne turned her head facing Jack and threw him a deadly glare.

Jack did not know whether to cry or to laugh at this moment. "I already told you and asked you to change to another. I can't help you if you don't believe me, right?"

"Phew!" Michael heaved a huge sigh of relief when he saw Yvonne's rock was not of a good quality. He then handed his piece of rock over to the apprentice. "Open mine now!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 346-350

Chapter 346

Yvonne felt her heart thrumming at her throat as she watched the apprentice cut Micheal's rock open. She desperately prayed that the gambling rock Michael picked was worse than hers. If his rock was a plain rock or contained just a little bit of jade, then she still had the chance to win the bet. Alas, the stone was later revealed as a rock of better quality than hers though, despite being extremely unsatisfactory and trash worth only about 20 to 30 thousand dollars.

Michael guffawed in an instant. "Please forgive me, Miss Yvonne. Looks like I won this time!" Michael chuckled sardonically and continued, "Pay up! 300 thousand dollars!"

"Hmph! It's only because Lady Luck was with you this time!" Yvonne snorted coldly before transferring money to the boss. However, because Yvonne was bent out of shape, she glared at the stall owner and complained irritably, "Jack was absolutely right. Your stall has no good stones at all!"

Obviously, Yvonne spoke it out of anger. The stall owner would not dare to go against the Drake family even though he was displeased with her words. He could only laugh bitterly.

"Tsk! Him? He's merely a lucky b*stard who guessed it by chance!" Michael sneered, his eyes burning in mockery.

"Hmm. Why don't you bet with me?" Jack responded with a cold smile. "But, we'll have to go to other stalls."

“As you wish.” Michael’s mood lifted instantly and grinned. “I’ve never competed with a rookie like you. This is refreshing and rather interesting. Come now, what are you betting on?”

“Same as before. If you lose, you’ll pay for the other party!” Jack replied, smiling.

Michael, on the other hand, shook his head unexpectedly. “No, no, no! I can do it with Yvonne, but with you? Forget it! You’re just a poor and penniless punk. I know it hasn’t been long since you started working and haven’t gotten the pay yet, so you must have no money right now!” Michael turned him down. “So if you win this bet, I’ll have to pay for you, and you basically gain something from nothing, right? You can’t fool me with that cheap trick of yours!”

Jack was rendered speechless for a moment. He, Jack, had no money? Hilarious! With his current wealth, he could easily buy the entire Wilson family, but this fat Wilson had the audacity to say he had no money? He was too reluctant to argue with him anyway. “Then what do you want to bet?” he spoke.

After thinking about it, Michael replied devilishly, “How about this: If anyone loses the bet, he’ll get on his knees and bark like a dog!”

“Michael, this is a little too much. Are you sure you want to torture yourself like this? It’s a bad idea.” Jack laughed at Michael’s suggestion.

The corners of Michael’s mouth twitched involuntarily. “Funny. You don’t dare to bet, do you?” He leered at the veteran. “Don’t pretend to understand me if you don’t dare to bet!”

“Go ahead, Jack. I’ll pay for you.” Yvonne suddenly came forward, and with an interesting proposition to boot.

Jack was slightly taken aback at her words. “Wow! I really didn’t expect that the charming Yvonne would help me right now. It must be my lucky day! Okay. Let’s do it then. I’ll give you the rock after it’s opened. It’s the rock that you pay after all, right?”

“Don’t have to thank me. I always stand against injustice, just like Tanya!” Yvonne had a small, suppressed smile. The surge of giddiness overwhelmed her so.

This man accidentally saw her without clothes yesterday, and she searched for every possible way to exact her vengeance. Was this not a great opportunity? It did not matter who would lose at the end of this bet; she would still be satisfied. Jack kneeling down and barking like a dog would satiate the anger from yesterday’s incident, while Michael ultimately losing the bet would serve her justice from the loss she suffered minutes ago!

“Don’t pick a big rock, alright? I’ll lose a huge profit if it’s too big!” she hastily added after mulling over their bet.

Chapter 347

Regardless, Jack walked toward another stall and took a close look. “Don’t worry, Miss Yvonne. You’ll only be making more money, not lose it. If you lose it, I’ll reimburse you!”

“If that’s what you wish, then so be it! I’ll take it as you’re borrowing money from me this time. I’ll help you to pay first.” With a grin on her face, Yvonne held Tanya’s hand in hers as she approached Jack.

“I’ll take this piece, then,” Jack spoke as he pointed at one big rock.

The rock was square, and it was estimated to be around 15 kilograms just by looking at its size.

However, this big square rock was under the stall owner’s buttocks. The owner used it as a stool as she sat on it.

“What? Y—You want this piece?” The boss was a middle-aged woman. She froze at her seat for a good moment before she shot up from her seat. Hearing Jack’s words sent a rush of happiness through her being.

This big square rock had been in this stall since a year ago. The middle-aged woman initially hoped that

some rookie would buy it because of its look; it looked smooth and shiny on the surface after all. However, a year had passed, and no one bought it. They all left after taking a closer look at it. Even the boss herself thought that it would be an unworthy plain rock since no one ever offered to buy it from her hands, hence she used it as an ordinary stone tool to keep her buttocks off the ground. The boss would not bother to bring the rock home every day after closing the stall had it not been for the tiny hint of red on its surface. It was heavy, after all.

She had never expected that, on this fine day, a young man expressed his interest in this rock!

“Jack, are you a fool? Everyone in Gemstone street knows that this rock has been sitting here for almost a year! Firstly, this rock is too big, and no one dared to bet on it. Secondly, its content isn’t exposed at all! There’s no sign of emerald nor jade on the surface, only a pitiful strand of red color! The red might be rubbed off after a few more times sitting on it.”

“Are you sure you’re choosing this one? You might as well just pay for both of us now!”

Michael burst into laughter, seeing Jack’s choice of rock. Jack; what a foolish man!

“Jack, are you trying to burn yourself? This rock is at least 15 kilograms! It’s more than 300 thousand!” Yvonne shook her head, disagreeing with Jack’s choice. Even though she was not fond of Jack, she still hoped that he could beat Michael after seeing how snobbish and arrogant Michael was when he won their bet.

“My dear sir, they’re the ones who don’t know anything. You, on the other hand, have a good eye. Come closer. Take a closer look at this hint of red! There might be some rare and scarce gem in it!” The middle-aged woman stall owner finally encountered some fool who wanted to buy it! How could she miss this excellent opportunity? “Let me tell you, just buy it! It’s definitely a rock of top-notch quality! Trust me, I’ve been purchasing those gambling rocks for years!”

“Hmph. You’re trying to trick a fool, aren’t you?” Tanya could barely hold it as she tried to expose her intentions. “If you really think that it’s a good rock, why don’t you open it yourself?”

This stall owner obviously wanted to sell this rock off quickly when she knew Jack was a gambling rock dummy. Was this not a scam?

“Yeah, boy, this Miss is right! Don’t buy it if you’re not a gambling rock professional! Everyone has seen this rock before!” Many surrounding onlookers, one by one, tried to persuade Jack to not make foolish decisions.

“This is definitely a treasure! You don’t understand.” Jack, on the other hand, chuckled happily. “This is it! I’ll pick this!”

“Okay, alright, young man. I’ll let someone weigh this rock right away. Don’t worry, I’ll give you a discount!” The woman immediately asked her two apprentices to move the rock over. “19 kilograms sharp!” she announced to Jack. “I’ll count it as 15 kilograms; the remaining kilograms are considered a gift to you. 300 hundred thousand is enough. I’m such a nice person!”

Chapter 348

“It’s 19 kilograms but you only collect the money for 15 kilograms. You truly are a kind person!” After listening to the exchange, Tanya leered, smiling coldly. “This is just an ordinary rock, so of course you’re kind enough to give a discount! If you really think this is a top-grade rock, will you still be this kind?”

“That’s right! You’re scamming a rock newbie! You’re nasty!” Yvonne echoed before turning her head to look at Jack. “Let me help you, Jack. The piece that you picked is nothing but a plain large stone! It’s just an ordinary stone, from the roadside.”

“Stop interfering!” the Young Master Wilson quickly interjected them. “Yvonne, don’t break the rules. This time, it’s me playing against Jack, not me against you! Since you’re not involved in this, you shouldn’t interfere further! If you insist on doing so, let’s call this bet off!”

“He’s right. Outsiders shouldn’t interfere!”

“I agree! The one who bet with Young Master Wilson should do the picking!”

The bystanders spoke up one by one as they commented on the bet.

Yvonne's pallor was unsightly, but she could not fight back anymore. After all, if she helped, she would be breaking the rules.

"What do you mean by 'bullying a newbie'? Miss Yvonne, I know you're a member of the Drake family, but please be reasonable! This is a gambling rock, and its content can't be predicted before it's cut open. You can't see through this rock, but what if this young man picks the right one?" The woman was sullen at her choice of words, but she then turned to Jack with a grin on her face. "Young man, do you still want it? I've given you a fair discount!"

"Of course! It's 90,000 dollars cheaper! Why would I not want it?" Jack accepted the offer in an instant, a smile plastered on his face. He then continued, "Miss Yvonne, a moment ago you said that you'll pay for me first. Could you please pay it now? Regardless of the rock's contents, I'll give it to you. After all, you're the one who paid for it, so it's a reward for you!"

Yvonne was so pissed that she almost fainted. This was a trashy plain rock no doubt, and nothing good would be in there after it was cut open. And this punk even said to her that he would give it to her? Nevermind, she would not want it. Although she could feel her blood boiling within her, she unwillingly still paid the money.

The stall owner felt much better once Yvonne paid for the rock. The big trashy rock was finally sold out to a fool! She thanked herself for never throwing the rock away, and she finally reaped the fruit by earning 300 thousand.

"Young Master Wilson, it's your turn now. Since you're playing a game, I suggest you choose a big one. Otherwise, you can't live up to your reputation." The middle-aged woman grinned as she tried to convince Michael.

Michael was satisfied when he saw that Jack had paid all that for a piece of junk. This idiot spent hundreds of thousands to buy a large rock, an ordinary rock that no one would ever pick, and yet he stayed confident with his choice! Michael could not wait to see Jack bark like a dog later after the game.

Michael's eyes wandered around the stall, and not long after, he spoke, "There are no more big rocks like this from your stall. Besides, even if I've picked a smaller one with just a tiny bit of gem, it'll be enough for me to win the bet!"

Once the last word of Michael's dropped, he pointed at a piece of gambling rock and said, "This one is not bad. The part exposed from the surface has good color as well. Hmmm. I think it may be a good one! Alright, I will pick this!"

Yvonne's heart sank deeper when Michael had chosen a piece that she would choose. Sigh. This time, Jack would lose for sure. Before that, Yvonne had been observing both men all the while, and she had a feeling the gambling rock that Michael had chosen was pretty good. She initially planned to make Jack pick it, but it eventually fell into Michael's hand.

What made her feel even more miserable was what Jack commented later on. "This rock is pretty good! Most of it is jade, and icy jadeite at that! You'll rake in a pretty sum after this. Such a lucky guy!" Jack praised Michael after taking a look at the piece in his hand.

Although Michael thought that Jack was a gambling rock rookie, he could not help but feel proud and content at Jack's praises. "Oh, really? Then you can just admit defeat. If half of my rock contains icy jadeite, I guess it's worth at least a few million! Now you can go ahead and learn how to bark like a dog!"

Chapter 349

"Hmph! We haven't even opened this one yet. How can you tell that I'll lose? I just said that yours wasn't a bad choice!" Jack chuckled, countenance nonchalant.

"Why you... Why would you put yourself down like that?" Yvonne muttered to herself.

"Cut mine open first!" Michael immediately paid for the rock in his excitement, and more than a hundred thousand disappeared just like that. The two apprentices cut into one side of the rock.

He stepped forward to take a look the second it was cut open. His lips quickly curled into a smile. "Hah!

Jack, you little b*stard. You were right on the nail this time. Do you see that? More than half of it is icy jadeite, and its coloring is pretty good too. This can probably go for a few million dollars, no problem there.”

“No way!” Yvonne and Tanya’s expressions darkened when they saw this. Michael had indeed chosen a good rock. It was hard to chance upon such a quality of a gemstone on a normal basis.

“Congratulations, Young Master Wilson! You chose a good one!” The stall owner was stunned silent. After all, she did not dare to open it herself and had just brought it out for sale. This was a huge loss for her.

However, gambling rocks worked this way. Pulses would quicken while gambling. No one could be blamed for her lack of foresight and luck this time around.

“How about it? Are you going to get on your knees and bark like the dog you are, Jack White? Just give up already. A gem like mine isn’t cut open even after two weeks in this street. Never thought I’d get it!” Young Master Wilson was immensely elated. His spirits had been uplifted.

He oh-so badly wanted to record Jack getting down on his knees and bark like a dog. He would record the entire thing and show it to the Taylors during Old Man Taylor’s 70th birthday bash. That would be extremely gratifying to do.

“I haven’t even opened this yet. How do you know if I’ve lost?” Jack gave a dry smile. “Please help me cut this open, Ma’am,” he said to the boss. “Cut it open on its biggest side.”

“All right!” The boss agreed to this, grinning, but she had a hunch that Jack was guaranteed to lose. She had seen a tinge of red on that rock a long time ago; not a single hint of jadeite was there. From the outside, it certainly looked like it was not worth much. Probably more than half of it was just plain rock. She would not have used it as a stool otherwise.

Yet when the rock was cut open, a haze of white was revealed. Then, they saw a tinge of green in the

white.

“It’s lavender jadeite. An icy species—and a high-quality one, too!”

“Oh my goodness... It’s almost the entire rock too. The rock only covers its surface. It’s all jade inside!”

The two apprentices cried out when they saw the hidden stone beneath the layering, their voices trembling in excitement as they spoke. They had worked under their master for several years now, and this was the first time they saw icy jadeite of this quality. How could they not be excited?

“No—No way!” Michael was flabbergasted. Its value was ridiculously high. It could easily be sold off at a starting price of 20 or 30 million dollars!

Chapter 350

“Let me see. Let me see!” Yvonne immediately rushed over and bent down to take a good look. She traced her fingers over the jade. “Oh my God. Its coloring is absolutely gorgeous. It’ll be so easy selling this over 20 million!”

“Is this icy lavender jadeite? It’s the first time I’ve seen something of this caliber!” Tanya was excited as well. Jack had all the stars in the world to thank for this sort of luck; he had chosen such a fantastic piece.

“It—It really is high-quality icy jadeite!” Michael frowned. He seriously lost this time around—and badly too.

Although he managed to get a pretty good gem, his gem was far inferior compared to Jack’s.

Jack then turned to Michael, a humorless smile on his face. “Young Master Wilson, get on your knees. You can’t turn back on your word as a man now, can you?” he teased.

“You...” Young Master Wilson’s features were contorted in an unreadable expression. He was the young

master of an aristocratic family. Was he really going to kneel in front of this stupid bodyguard and bark like a dog? He would shame his entire family if word of this got out. Everyone would gossip about this behind his back when he would return here in the future. He truly regretted his actions. He should have never made this bet with Jack. However, who could have imagined that this hothead—who had no idea about gemstones—would actually choose such a precious item just like that?

“It—It really is icy lavender jadeite of top quality!” The stall owner looked extremely crestfallen. Her expression was not much better to look at than Young Master Wilson’s. She had thought that she would never sell it out, assuming it was a piece of rock. Who knew that it turned out to be such a huge chunk of pure jadeite? She never had a clue; it was merely her stool all this time.

“My God, that young man is rich now!”

“That’s right. He managed to spot such a gem, literally. He’s amazing!”

“Wasn’t he in the military? Don’t tell me that he just took a wild guess?”

“Maybe. Maybe he saw that this rock was big and chose it just like that. Why shouldn’t he choose such a big one?”

The crowd began to murmur among themselves.

“Can’t tell if Young Master Wilson will actually get on his knees and bark like a dog after this loss!” One of them pinned their gaze onto Michael, a hint of a smile at his lips.

Young Master Wilson always walked down this street with a cocky swagger, and he was quick to take back his words when he spoke. However, it was a little different this time. This bodyguard of the Drake family was nothing special, but he had the support of Tanya and Yvonne Drake. It would not do if he did not fulfill his promise.

“Don’t push it, you punk!” Two of Young Master Wilson’s bodyguards immediately glared at Jack when they saw this. “You’re just a bodyguard,” they sneered. “Our young master is the heir of a powerful aristocratic family. Young Master Wilson was just joking around with you, and you took it seriously?”

“That’s right. Don’t take it seriously, you punk. It was just a joke!” They believed that as long as they stepped up at a moment like this and spoke up for their young master, the Drake family’s bodyguard would not dare to do anything stupid. After all, a bodyguard was in a lower social position. How could he ever dare to provoke Young Master Wilson?

If that man acknowledged that it was a joke, at least their young master’s face was saved. More importantly, this meant that they had helped Young Master Wilson and allowed him to exit the stage gracefully. He would surely reward them nicely when they returned.

Michael grinned when he heard this; his bodyguards were quick-witted indeed. If they put it that way, Jack had no choice but to back down if he valued his life.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 351-355

Chapter 351

“No way. Young Master Wilson is a grown man, and a man must always keep his word, no?” Jack spoke without sparing the other man’s shame, grinning.

“That’s right. Unless you admit that you’re not a man but a eunuch or a woman, we won’t let this slide!” The satisfied Tanya also chimed in, her arms folded across her chest when she heard their defiance.

“Young Master Wilson, you only made the bet with Jack because you thought that he was new at this, and therefore not well-versed with gambling rocks. Aren’t you ashamed now that you’ve lost to a rookie? Furthermore, you refuse to acknowledge your debt now that you’ve lost. It wouldn’t be very nice if word got out, right? Why are you such a sore loser?” This time, it was Yvonne who stepped forward and sneered at Wilson.

The bodyguards dared not make a single noise anymore. The Drake family was one of the most eminent

aristocratic families; they were in no position to threaten or bully Tanya Drake. It was almost like signing their death certificates.

“Who said that I was a sore loser?” Young Master Wilson clenched his teeth. “I admit defeat!” he declared.

Shock rippled through the crowd. They never expected Young Master Wilson to give in so easily. However, it was still the natural course of action. The people who stood before him were not any ordinary folk, but were of the Drake family. He could not afford to stand against them.

Their bodyguard, on the other hand, was extremely bold to stand up and confront Young Master Wilson. Did the young man not fear that the young master would hold a grudge against him?

No one expected Young Master Wilson to smile. “Still, I’ve had some knee pain due to rheumatism these two days,” he said. “How about I get my bodyguard to do it for me?”

“No.” Jack did not even bother to give it a second thought. “Don’t tell me that you’re going to send your bodyguard as your substitute when you get married?” he teased, a grin on his face as he did.

“You...” Young Master Wilson was so furious that all the color was drained from his face. He hated Jack so much that he wanted to tell his own bodyguards to beat him until he turned black and blue.

It was only Jack’s luck that Tanya and Yvonne were next to him; he had no choice but to stay his hand. “You really got some nerve, punk,” he said. “You dare not spare my reputation?”

“You lose, you pay up—that’s the only logic I follow. Am I wrong? Let’s say that I’m the one who lost today and I told you that I was joking, I don’t think that you’d let me off the hook!” Jack was not intimidated in the slightest as he held the young master’s glare. He had a fiery aura not many possessed in them.

Yvonne was also stunned by the sight. This man had so much masculinity in him. Any other bodyguard from the Drake family would have submitted a long time ago. After all, as a mere bodyguard, one would

always worry that others would slowly begin to take revenge on them. Jack refused to budge, and Yvonne and Tanya stood beside him. Young Master Wilson was backed into a corner.

He quickly formulated an escape plan. "What about this? I'll give you 2 million dollars, and we'll forget that this ever happened," he offered.

"2 million?" Jack was stunned. "Young Master Wilson, aren't you undervaluing yourself? I never knew that your reputation was worth so little!"

The corners of Young Master Wilson's mouth twitched. This little punk was seriously overstepping his boundaries.

He thought about it again before he spoke again, "How about this then? The gem that I found is worth at least 7 or 8 million dollars. How about I give it to you?"

At this, Tanya and Yvonne could not help but look at Jack. If he let Young Master Wilson get away this time, then not only would he not earn a target on his back, but he would get 7 or 8 million dollars. It was a hefty sum of money.

They assumed that Jack would agree to this deal. Any other person would have snapped it up a long time ago.

"7 or 8 million is nothing to me. Give me a billion, and then we'll talk!"

Chapter 352

"1 billion!"

Many from the crowd inhaled sharply when they heard this. This bodyguard was just pushing it at this point. Was he aware of how much money 1 billion was? He had guts to be asking for 1 billion!

Furthermore, Young Master Wilson had kindly offered the gemstone he had just bought, valued at around 7 or 8 million dollars; that was a pretty good deal on its own. How much could a mere bodyguard earn anyway? He spoke as though he had plenty of money.

“1 billion? Aren’t you just being obnoxious? Why don’t you go and steal it yourself?” Young Master Wilson stared at him as though he was a madman, a contemptuous smile slowly forming on his lips. “Oh, I know why you need so much money now,” he said. “You’ve been thinking about it till it drove you nuts, didn’t you? Your dearest Grandfather Taylor’s 70th birthday is fast approaching, and you’ll be chased out of the Taylors if you can’t fork out the 40 million you promised. Also, you’d have to break up with Selena Taylor, right?”

“No way. This guy is Selena Taylor’s husband?”

“Mhmm. I heard that he’s a military vet—a war hero. I think he was the one who saved the day during the incident at the zoo!”

Murmurs began to circulate among the crowd.

“This guy is the definition of a true man, and he’s not too bad of a person either. He risked his life at the frontlines so that we can live peaceful lives. My son, on the other hand, never made it back...” Lamenting, an old man from the crowd sighed as he recalled his son who had perished at the frontlines.

Jack glanced toward the old man before looking at the gemstone right before Young Master Wilson. “Fine. I’ll let you have a bit of dignity today.” Jack took the gemstone from him. “I’ll take the gemstone so that you don’t have to kneel down and bark like a dog.”

“As if you’d dare do something like that!” Young Master Wilson’s bodyguard immediately snarled, full of bravado.

Yvonne wanted so badly to see Young Master Wilson bark like a dog and thought that Jack would be

firm in the idea, but she never expected that he would be convinced so easily. Needless to say, she was unsatisfied with the outcome.

She then looked at the icy lavender jadeite. "Jack, you said that you'd give this to me after you've cut it open," she told him. "You sure you won't regret it?"

The crowd became hyperattentive when they heard this. This gem was worth around 20 to 30 million. Was Jack really going to give it to her? Of course, it would make Jack less trustworthy should he choose to eat his words, but most would understand him. Many of them would choose to do so, too. It was a matter of 20 to 30 million dollars, after all!

Yvonne merely wanted to see his response; she had no intention of claiming it as her own property. After all, she had only forked out 300 thousand, yet this gem was worth over a hundred times more than that. More importantly, she had advised Jack to not choose this rock. How could she have a say in anything now?

"I will never go back on my word," he replied unhesitatingly, and it was an unexpected reply. "Anyone who knows me knows that I'm a man of my word."

After he said that, he walked toward the old man. "Your son died on the battlefield?"

The old man nodded his head, a bitter smile on his face. "That's right. I have a son and a daughter. My son had enlisted himself in the army, but who would've known that I'd never see him again. Now, it's just me and my daughter, living our lives." He released a tired sigh; red began to rim his eyes. "Still, my son was a hero because he died on the battlefield. How can we live in such peace without their sacrifices? I believe that those of you who were in the military would understand this!"

Unexpectedly, Jack thrust the gemstone toward the old man. "I can't do much for you, but this gem is worth a few million. Take this as my offering of thanks."

"What?" The crowd was stunned when they saw this, and hearts were touched at that moment. What a

gift to give, from a former soldier to a martyr's family.

"Young man, this...this is too precious. I can't accept this!"

Chapter 353

The old man's eyes reddened even further; warmth began to tingle in his chest.

"You have to accept this. This is a token of my appreciation—and it contains the hearts of all the soldiers of our country," Jack insisted, earnest and solemn in his persuasion.

"A—Alright. Thank you very, very much!" The old man's eyes turned glassy. He slowly took the gemstone from Jack's hands.

"It contains the hearts of all the soldiers in our country? Hmph. You think too highly of yourself now. Even a general wouldn't spew such flowery nonsense!" Michael, who stood by the side, smiled a cruel smile when he heard this. "Talking as though you were a god of war!" he scoffed to himself.

"Thank...thank you!" The old man wanted to get onto his knees, but Jack stopped him.

The old man quickly went to a nearby store to exchange the jadeite for money. So long as it was sold for a slightly cheaper price, plenty of brokers were willing to buy such gemstones.

"How generous of you, giving something worth 7 to 8 million away just like that. Why didn't you keep it for yourself? If you gave it to Grandfather Taylor, the Taylors wouldn't trouble you so much since its value is almost 10 million. Well, almost... But it's better than not being able to fork out anything when his birthday comes along!" Michael smirked as he came face-to-face with Jack.

"You don't have to sweat yourself over this matter. Nonetheless, I'm letting you off with a warning: Don't even think about having my woman. You might regret everything otherwise—and it'd be too late

then.” Jack stared at the other man. He did not even see Michael as a menace.

“Interesting. Are you threatening me?” Young Master Wilson burst into laughter. “That’s right—she’s your woman now. But if you can’t bring out the promised 40 million during the old man’s 70th birthday, you’ll be kicked out of the Taylor family.” Michael clicked his tongue. “You’ll be forced to divorce her, and if she’s divorced, then isn’t she free to do as she pleases? She won’t be your woman then.”

“Just wait and see!” Jack could not be bothered with the other man. He turned toward Tanya. “Miss Tanya, should we continue shopping or go back now?” he spoke, falling back into his bodyguard posture.

“Let’s go back. We can’t lug such a big gemstone around with us. Besides, someone is really eager to go back and properly inspect the stone at home!” Tanya smiled and glanced at Yvonne. Yvonne adored gambling rocks, and she loved jadeite even more.

“Let’s go back. Jack, carry this back to the car. It’s way too heavy for me!” Yvonne cast Jack a brilliant smile. This man had given her such a valuable item. She no longer cared about yesterday’s incident.

Jack easily hefted the gemstone, and the three walked towards the car.

It was only then when Yvonne looked as though something just came to mind when they were halfway to the car. “Jack, are you really going to give such a precious object to me?” she said, expression unreadable. “Don’t tell me that you like me and want to be on my good side? I told you that I’m not the least bit interested in a married man such as yourself. Don’t get any ideas!”

Chapter 354

Jack felt slightly bashful. Yvonne was under the impression that she was every man’s object of desire. Now that he thought about it, his actions were rather questionable. Would anybody else just give away something worth 20 to 30 million? Furthermore, Yvonne was good-looking, and she had a nice figure. He had accidentally caught sight of that figure yesterday too, so she probably suspected he had some unsavory intentions towards her and wanted to get on her good side by giving her such a present. It was certainly a plausible theory.

Jack gave a wry smile. "Don't worry, I'm not having any wild ideas about you," he assured. "You paid for this, and I already said that I'd give this to you no matter what came out while you were paying. I don't go back on my word as a man." He paused for a while here before continuing, "Just take it as an apology for yesterday's accident, if you're genuinely that uncomfortable with taking it."

In truth, he had not really done anything wrong yesterday. In fact, she did not close the door and walked straight out of the bathroom as she was. Nonetheless, she was a woman. Jack still felt slightly apologetic for that.

Yvonne's cheeks immediately flamed when she heard his words. She did not know why the incident from yesterday suddenly crossed her mind. In addition, she felt like she was naked when Jack looked at her at this moment. It embarrassed her to no end.

She rolled her eyes at him. "What do you mean you don't have any ideas about me? Am I that ugly?"

Jack quickly cleared his throat and decided to be blunt. "You are good-looking, but I have a wife, and I think she's more beautiful than you are. I certainly won't have any wild ideas!"

"You..." Yvonne was so angry that she stamped her foot. What did he mean, saying that she was good-looking yet was less beautiful than his wife? He really had a foot in his mouth. Could he not even attempt to sweet-talk a girl? Besides, she was far younger than Selena, and she had a voluptuous body. How could that woman ever compare to her?

"Hold on. Why is your face turning red, Yvonne? What did Jack do to you yesterday?" Tanya was quick to notice something, and she asked as soon as she detected something off.

"Oh, it's nothing!" Yvonne suddenly panicked. She did not know to speak of something like this.

She often wore sexy clothing, and even her skirts were too revealing sometimes, yet she was a conservative girl in personality. She had never been in a relationship and had never even held a boy's

hand before.

“But I think there’s something going on between you too!” Tanya stared at them, suspicious.

Of course, Jack and Yvonne’s lips were sealed. She could not do anything but give up. Soon enough, they arrived back at the Drake family’s residence. In a car parked on the opposite side of the street, Luca and the other bodyguards noticed Jack had returned.

“He’s back. Brother Luca, it’s pretty late now. That punk will probably get off from work soon. Our opportunity comes the moment he leaves work!” a bodyguard spoke.

“That’s right. We must catch this b*stard!” Luca nodded his head. “Our young miss wouldn’t be in such a dire state now if he hadn’t fed her crotons!”

They never thought that after a short while, they would see Jack driving a car out all by himself.

“That b*stard actually drives a Porsche. It’s pretty early for him to leave work. It’s only 4:30 now, and he’s already out!” Seeing this, Luca immediately set the plan into motion. “Come on, let’s follow him,” he spoke. “We’ll think about catching him later once we stop his car.”

In an instance, the George family’s bodyguards—numbering over 10—went down at the same time, walking toward Jack.

Chapter 355

“I’m barred at the gates the moment I come out. Seems like you’ve waited for me for a long time!” Jack’s lips twisted into a mirthless smile as he got down from the car.

“Ahem. I hope you don’t mind, but you’re coming along with us today.” Luca chuckled, cutting straight to the chase.

“Really? Where to?” Jack asked.

“The George family’s residence. You fed our young miss crotons, so you have no choice but to come along with us. Not a single one of your family members will be spared if anything happens to the young miss!” Luca looked at Jack. He knew the punk was probably a skilled fighter; Jack would not have been recruited as a bodyguard for the Drake family otherwise.

However, they had numbers on their side, and they were the guards of the George family, thus they did not tremble before Jack.

“That’s a normal response,” came Jack’s reply, but his forehead creased soon after. “What do you mean? You’ve already taken my family?”

“Hmph. What do you think, punk?” One of the bodyguards chuckled. “We’re just missing you and your wife, but never mind your wife. She’s a manager in the Drake family’s company, after all. You’re more important!”

“You dare to take my family? How bold of you.” Jack’s expression darkened. A sudden chill swept over the area.

“Look, we don’t want to raise a hand against them either, punk. Just come along with us quietly.” The bodyguard thought that they were in complete control of the situation and grinned at Jack. It was clear he did not think anything of the other man.

“It’s in your best interest that my family be left unharmed. It won’t just be you who’ll accompany them to the grave otherwise—and even after I’m done with all the Georges, the bodies still won’t be enough!” Jack’s features hardened; his fingers curled into fists.

“Hmph. We talked nicely to you. You think you’re some sort of big shot now?”

“Seems like you’ll seriously look down on us bodyguards of the Georges if we don’t teach you a lesson.”

“Of course, the Drakes are more powerful than the Georges in terms of financial and material wealth, but no one said that the Georges’ bodyguards can’t rival the Drakes’ bodyguards!”

Two or three men circled Jack, prepared to pummel him. Alas, they had no chance to strike first when Jack lashed out. His fists flew, and in a flash, the three bodyguards were on the floor, spitting blood.

“Vermin like you don’t even deserve to put yourself on the same pedestal as me.” Jack icily glared at the men writhing on the floor and moaning in pain. He bore the indisputable aura of someone high above them.

Luca was completely stunned in his spot. Jack moved too fast; he did not manage to get a good look and his subordinates were already on the floor. Someone like this was way too terrifying. In a moment, all his confidence from earlier deserted him.

“I’ll go to George family’s residence, but you’re not going to hold me down!” Jack waved at Luca and the other bodyguards.

At this moment, Luca’s phone rang.

He quickly picked up the call. “Luca, have you and your guards done anything yet?” came Mr. George’s voice from the other end of the line. “Jack is a miracle doctor. Our daughter is completely fine now, and she’s in good spirits. Plus, she genuinely lost 15 kilos. You have to invite Jack and his wife over nicely. They’re our esteemed guests!” he spoke.

“Oh, that’s right,” the patriarch added. “Our butler has already booked a hotel—the six-star Dynasty Hotel!”

The corners of Luca's mouth began to twitch furiously when he heard all of this. Why could he not have called one or two minutes earlier? Now, Jack did not seem too happy.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 356-360

Chapter 356

"Brother Luca, what do we do? Seems like the b*stard is super strong!" One of the George family's bodyguards asked Luca right after he hung up. It was obvious that what Jack did just then had sparked fear in them.

Luca exhaled a heavy sigh and approached Jack. He bowed ever so slightly. "My apologies, Miracle Doctor White. It's all a misunderstanding," he apologized. "Our master just called us and said that the young miss is doing very well. In fact, she lost a total of 15 kilos today. He specially said that he'd be treating you and your family to dinner. We've already booked the hotel."

The remaining bodyguards also started to bow when they heard this. "We apologize, Miracle Doctor White!" they cried toward Jack.

Jack was stunned; their attitudes changed entirely in the blink of an eye. More importantly, so many people were watching them. Being called 'Miracle Doctor White' attracted a little too much attention than what he would like.

He could do nothing but smile. "It's fine so long as my family isn't hurt. Don't call me a miracle doctor—I'm not one in the first place. I just saw that your young miss was a little overweight and helped her to lose it."

The crowd was taken aback. This man spoke of it so easily. Help her lose weight? If Sharon George could lose weight that easily, the issue would not have dragged on to this day. She had seen so many doctors, so many dieticians. Every single one decided that her obesity was an incurable disease.

After he mulled over his thoughts, Luca asked, "Miracle Doctor White...no. Mr. White, will there be any complications if she loses that much weight in such a short time? Will it affect the young miss's health?"

“Don’t worry; there won’t be any complications. Furthermore, she won’t go back to her initial weight, and her skin will be supple and healthy!” Jack spoke confidently.

“Oh. That’s great then!” Luca heaved an internal sigh of relief. “Before, we had invited so-called professionals to help our young miss lose weight. Unfortunately, not only was it difficult for her to lose two or three kilos, but she’d even gain over 10 kilos a few days after that.”

“Despite all that, you kidnapped my family. I can’t forgive you just because you’re treating us to dinner. Your master will have to apologize to my family and ask them for forgiveness!” Jack said earnestly after he thought about it.

“Don’t worry, don’t worry. Our master will surely apologize. We’re reasonable people,” Luca assured him. Besides, he did this because he was worried about the young miss’s health—if any complications will occur. Only then did he temporarily kidnap your relatives. I assure you we didn’t lay a finger on them. We just let them rest in the Georges’ residence!”

He noticed that Jack was definitely not a run-of-the-mill bodyguard. He was too quick on his feet. He probably would not last more than three seconds if he had fought the man instead. Besides, so many dieticians and doctors could not cure the young miss, yet Jack had helped Sharon lose 15 kilos just like that. If he was not a miracle doctor, what was he? This man was so skilled at both fighting and medicine. He was anything but normal.

It was then when Luca made a mental note: He would tell the master privately that Jack White could never be crossed once they returned. In fact, it would be best if they could establish a good relationship with him.

“All right, I’ll let you guys off the hook this once and go over to have dinner. I want to have a good look and see if you’ve bullied my family.” Jack agreed after he gave it some thought.

“No way! Of course not!” Luca nearly collapsed in relief. Not one scratch was inflicted on Fiona or the rest of them before he came to the Drake family’s residence. He hoped that the master and the rest of

the guards did not raise a finger against them during his absence.

Jack was just a bodyguard, but with his level of skill in his fists, the Georges would incur a bitter victory if they fought... That was assuming they could win.

Chapter 357

Carefully planning, Luca then commanded the other two bodyguards, "You two! Go pick up Miss Selena from her company. You must be respectful and treat her well, do you understand?"

At this moment, Jack thought of his precious daughter. "Oh, right. You didn't take away my daughter, Kylie, right?" he spoke. "If she's terrified because of you, you'd land yourself in serious trouble."

After all, Kylie was only a little over four years old; he did not want her to be frightened and traumatized at such an innocent age.

"Well, when we went to your house, we didn't see any little girl, so we didn't..." Luca wiped the cold sweat on his forehead once more. Thankfully, they did not take the daughter away as she went to school. Otherwise, this unassailable yet mysterious man before him would be infuriated.

Although the George family was puissant, it was certainly not a good idea to give Jack the hump.

"Alright, I'll pick up my daughter first before going to the George family's residence," Jack decided before going back into his car.

Without further ado, Luca quickly commanded his subordinates to make way for Jack. "Hurry up and move the car. Make way for Mr. White!"

Meanwhile, in the George family's residence, Sharon no longer had an upset stomach, and she did not want to visit the toilet again. It seemed that the efficacy of the pill had completely worn off, and Sharon

was lively once more. The greatest outcome from everything that had happened was that Sharon had lost more than 15 kilograms, and she weighed only around 90 kilograms at this moment. If they had not seen it for themselves, Mr. and Mrs. George would hardly believe it.

The girl before them turned into an alluring and comely young lady. This was their daughter!

The clothes on Sharon were obviously bigger and looser now as she drastically lost so much weight. She took a shower and found herself some old skirt that she used to wear when she was slimmer back then to change into.

“Wow. Now that Miss Sharon has lost so much weight, her features are delicate and sharp. She looks very charming. If this continues tomorrow and the day after tomorrow, Miss Sharon would be stunningly beautiful!” Fiona’s praises for Sharon gushed right out of her mouth as she looked at her. Internally, however, she sighed in relief.

The head of George, on the other hand, felt apologetic toward Fiona and the others. “I’m truly sorry, everyone. I especially didn’t expect that Jack, a veteran, could be so skilled in the medical area.” He paused and then continued, “I hope you can forgive me for what I did today.”

“Oh, it’s all forgiven. You’ve already invited us to a six-star hotel for a luxurious dinner. How can we be so unforgiving?” Xena responded with a smile. This was the George family, a first-class aristocrat family! She would be set for life if she could get connected with a member or two of the family.

“Dinner is a must.” Master George relented with a bitter smile. He then spoke again in a worried tone, “I’m concerned about Jack; that he’ll be unhappy about it. After all, he didn’t ask for a penny from my daughter, and yet he gave her such a magical pill to help my daughter lose weight.”

“It’s nothing at all. Don’t be preoccupied. He listens to me, and he wouldn’t be angry if I asked him not to. Besides, is there any parent on this earth who doesn’t care about their children? Mr. and Mrs. George are only afraid of bad things happening to Miss Sharon.” The smile on Fiona’s face was only a facade; she was deathly afraid initially.

“Hmmm. We’ll be going out to dinner in a while, and it might not be convenient for you to travel here

and there, given that you don't have a car. We have lots of cars in our garage, and some of them are just staying in the garage for nothing. How about you pick two of them?" Master George placated after mulling over his thoughts.

"These two cars represent my sincere apologies. What do you think?"

"Um... Uh. Mr. George, you're too polite and benevolent to us! It happened that my son and his girlfriend, Xena, both have driving licenses but don't have a car! Thank you so much!" Fiona gushed with excitement, her eyes brightened in an instant.

Chapter 358

In a blink of an eye, Fiona and the others standing before one of the George family's garages.

When the heavy metal door was lifted, they found themselves face-to-face with opulent and sumptuous branded cars: Bentley, Porsche, Ferrari, and even Rolls-Royce. Besides, some of them were rare and of limited edition. Each of them bore an imperial and illustrious aura like a prideful ruler.

"Ma, can... Can I pick one as well? Is it mine after I pick it?" Xena was a little agitated; she never anticipated that her blessings would come so soon. She suddenly found herself touched with her decision of dating Ben. Him as a back-up was indeed her best decision ever.

Nevertheless, Fiona countered, "How could you think like that? A moment ago, you were saying you're just Ben's girlfriend, and not a Taylor yet. For the time being, this car doesn't belong to you, but you can drive it since you're Ben's girlfriend."

"Jack and sister Selena both have their own cars. Only Ben and I have driving licenses without cars. Ma, can't you just give it to me?"

The bitter feeling of remorse hung over her head at that moment. After all, she was desperately cutting ties with the Taylors to save herself a while ago. How would she even know Jack could truly help Sharon lose weight? She bet Fiona would not want to give her the car anymore because of what happened.

As expected, Fiona flashed a small smile and said, "You can use the car, but the car is mine, and the other one belongs to Ben. You can drive my car now for the time being as I wait for the moment I'd get my driving license, and I'll use it then. By that time, you could use Ben's. It's more than enough for you to share one with him."

Xena swallowed down her tears of bitter disappointment. She could only smile bitterly at this moment. "Alright then. We're a family anyway, so it doesn't matter who owns the cars."

"It's good that you understand it." Fiona chuckled. "Pick a car."

"Master George, can we pick this...this Rolls-Royce?" Ben had been staring at a raven black Rolls-Royce for the longest time, and he felt giddy.

"Absolutely!" Master George smiled. "This is my apologies for inviting you to my place forcibly. As long as you're willing to forgive me for my rudeness and don't speak ill of me in front of Jack. You can pick whichever you desire!"

"Wonderful! Master George, you truly deserve to be patriarch of the George family. How generous, how benevolent!" Ben could barely conceal his soaring excitement. He immediately pointed at one car. "This is it! I pick this!"

"For the other one, we'll pick Rolls-Royce as well!" Xena exclaimed, an obvious tremble in her voice. If she got to drive a Rolls-Royce, it would immediately increase her social status. Just the thought of it sent shivers of excitement throughout her being.

Master George guffawed. "Not a problem! Let me get you the keys right now." He soon got the keys to both cars and handed them over.

"This is amazing. We can now drive such good cars, too! This is fancier and much more expensive than your sister and brother-in-law's car!" Xena gushed uncontrollably.

“Master George, don’t you worry. My son-in-law is nothing but skillful in treating people. He treated my husband’s leg, and he’s now fully recovered!” Fiona chuckled while praising Jack in front of Master George.

Fiona’s words shocked the George family. A short while ago, when they threatened to kill Fiona and the others, Fiona tried her very best to shove all the blames and responsibilities onto Jack. Not only did she not acknowledge Jack as her son-in-law, but she insisted Jack was an outsider.

Now that Fiona saw opportunities and benefits, she changed her attitude, calling Jack her dear son-in-law unabashedly.

Chapter 359

“Really? I’d like to meet this son-in-law of yours then!” Master George flashed a small smile before he continued, “Both of you, drive the cars out of the garage and park them at the main gate. You can drive to the Dynasty Hotel for dinner in a while.”

“Alright, we’ll do that!” Ben and Xena—whose every cell in their body was screaming excitedly not long ago—could not wait any longer to test out the cars. They drove the cars and parked them at the main gate.

After a short while, Luca returned to the George family’s residence with a few wounded men. Upon their return, Luca made his injured men get medical treatment before presenting himself before Master George.

Luca called Master George to come aside and whispered to him, “Sir, you didn’t harm Fiona and the others after we left the residence, did you? Jack has threatened us, saying that if we touched a single strand of hair of his family, he won’t go easy on us!”

“Hmph. This young man is rather adamant and braze. How dare he not put the George family in his eyes!” After hearing what Luca had reported, Master George began to sneer.

“If it’s not because he managed to treat my daughter’s strange obesity, I’ll make him know that no one

can cross the George family!” Master George subsequently scoffed. “Us being a first-class aristocratic family isn’t a joke!”

How dare this punk threaten the George family. Was he not a little too bold? Was the George family that easy to be threatened?

However, the last thing he expected was Luca, the head bodyguard, tried to persuade him, “Sir, Jack White is no ordinary man. He can heal young miss’s condition, which shows that he possessed good medical skills. Moreover, his combat ability is superior that no bodyguards hired by the Drake family can compare to him!”

“What do you mean? Is he that strong?” Master George’s feature turned solemn in an instant after hearing Luca’s exaggerated claims on Jack.

“Yes, Sir! He’s so strong that even three or four of our men wouldn’t be able to defeat him. It’ll only take him a second to knock them down and not a single chance for them to counterattack. Frankly speaking, even I can’t do it at such a speed, Sir. I believe he’s stronger than I am!” Luca’s face hardened as he spoke. There were not many people who acquired better combat skill than he did in this Eastfield.

“What a strong man! It looks like the Drakes have recruited another skilled bodyguard!” After hearing it, Master George quickly thought of something that made his heart skip a beat. “Wait, what? Did you say that you and your men have already fought Jack?” Master George questioned. “I’m afraid that he’ll be very upset since you’ve done it. After all, to Sharon, Jack is her savior that helped her lose weight and to start anew. It was a really bad move for us to go against Jack!”

“Sir, the main reason is that your phone call came a little too late. If you’ve called one minute later, I’d be lying on the ground as well!” Luca showed a bitter smile and continued, “Nonetheless, Jack White isn’t an unforgiving person. He has the domineering and generous aura that a soldier should have. I can completely concur with this. He said as long as we didn’t do anything to harm his family, apologize to his family, and they’re willing to forgive us, then it’s fine for him. Otherwise...” Luca paused for a second and then carried on, with a worried tone. “Otherwise, he’ll dig our graves.”

“What?” The uneasiness washed over Master George; he stood frozen upon hearing it. “Isn’t this punk

being too arrogant? How strong is he that he could say such words!” Master George was rendered speechless for a good while before his lips could eventually part again. He thanked his lucky stars that he did not harm Fiona and the others; he even made an effort to apologize for it! At the same time, he doubted Jack’s ability to defeat the George family on his own.

Chapter 360

At the same time the conversation between Master George and Luca ended, Selena arrived at George’s mansion in her car. She parked the car in the yard and got out of the car right after.

Selena still had her professional attire since she had just gotten off of work. Her aura made her look capable and responsible.

“Is this Jack’s wife? Jack is lucky to have her as his wife! Can you see how outstanding she is?”

Some from the George family exclaimed when Selena came into view.

“Pa, Ma, are you alright?” Selena came to Fiona and Andrew and took a good look at them. She then asked, “What happened? Why did the George family invite us to dinner out of a sudden?”

“Hey, it’s okay. Nothing happened!”

Fiona answered with a smile. “Didn’t Jack help Miss Sharon to lose weight? Now that Miss Sharon has successfully lost around 15 kilograms, Master George is so delighted that he invited us to dinner! It’s his way of expressing his gratitude to us. Not only that, but he also showed us his garage and had us pick two of his cars as gifts!”

Fiona pulled Selena to the two Rolls-Royce as she spoke, “What do you think about these two cars, Selena? Look, these are so new. All their cars look very new; I guess they barely use them. It’s a waste to see those cars parked in the garage and not using them. He asked us to pick, so of course we’d have to pick the most lavish ones!”

Selena was dumbfounded at her words. These were Rolls-Royce, for God’s sake!” She smiled wryly and sighed. “Ma, you really know how to help yourself and choose whatever you like.”

“Of course! They’re all luxury cars, and they asked me to choose two of them. Why shouldn’t I? Besides, we didn’t get them by stealing or snatching. This a gift from the George family. Why shouldn’t we take it? We’re not fools.” Fiona’s face looked as though it was beaming. “Your brother and Xena will use these cars, and after I get my driving license, I’ll be driving it!” Fiona said to Selena.

“Xena?” She immediately turned her head and looked to the other side upon hearing her mother’s words. Only then did she realize that Xena Jackson—this liar—was strolling with her brother in the garden on the other side.

Selena’s face darkened in an instant. “Why is she here? Ma, didn’t you tell Ben what had happened that day? Why didn’t he break up with her?”

“Selena, you know how much Ben loves Xena. Do you think it’s possible for him to ask for a breakup? Moreover, Xena already explained that it was only a misunderstanding. Both times that she planned the robberies were for her vanity. She showed off in front of her drinking-buddies and was eavesdropped by the other party over a drinking session. In fact, she didn’t initiate the collaboration with the other party!” Fiona replied in an awkward tone.

Selena was rendered speechless for a moment. “Ma, how could you believe in what she said?” she spoke once she found her voice. “Didn’t Jack already explain that Xena was given a portion after the robberies? Her ultimate intention is the money; the Taylors’ money!”

Alas, these words made Fiona upset. She shot Selena a fiery glare and rebuked, “If she was really after our money, why was she still with us when we’re not wealthy and have nothing at all? Hasn’t she been loyal to your brother all the while? Besides, Jack didn’t like Xena in the first place! We can’t completely believe in what he had told us, can we?”

“Still, the Motorbike Robbers told us the same!” Selena was unconvinced of her mother’s opinion. She always felt that there was more to Xena than what she let on; that she was not a good woman. Eventually, something bad would happen if Ben continued being with her.

“That was to frame her!” Stubbornly, Fiona was still taking Xena’s side. “Just let it pass! Perhaps Xena has some difficulties that we don’t know. We can’t completely trust Jack’s one-sided words, after all. We

weren't there when it all went down, right? Since your brother likes her so much, let everything that happened in the past be buried. Let's just pretend that nothing happened. If you're still unhappy about it, we'll all take extra precautions in the future and observe her closely to see what kind of person she is."

Selena could not find herself to say anything after that. Twice. They were robbed twice, yet they still let the matter go. However, given that her mother took Xena's side and her unbelievable younger brother's love for Xena, Selena could only concede.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 361-365

Chapter 361

Jack and Kylie soon arrived at the George family's residence main gate. He got out of the car and glanced over his surroundings. His face sunk.

"My Miracle Doctor White! It's so great to finally see you here!" Master George's smile emerged in an instant and came over to welcome Jack. He stretched out his hand to show his sincerity.

Jack placed Kylie at her feet before taking Master George's hand. "Don't have to call me a genius doctor or what-so-ever. I'm not a miracle doctor. In this world, there's only one person that is worth being called a miracle doctor. This person is Ethan Hays!" Jack bore a small smile as he spoke. "Jack will do," he added.

"Alright then. Jack, your medical skills are really excellent!" Master George commented after a brief moment of thinking. "I've never met a doctor like you!"

Jack noticed that there was no sign of anger on his family's faces. "It looks like my mother-in-law isn't upset at all," Jack concluded.

Master George's face flushed. He was embarrassed. "I was indeed reckless previously, and I have apologized to them."

“Yes, he’s right! It’s only a misunderstanding. After all, your medical skills are so good that we as your family aren’t aware of it, let alone Master George!” Fiona approached Jack and interrupted their conversation with a smile on her face. “Master George is very kind and generous! He even gifted us two of his luxury cars! I’ve never met someone as benevolent as he is!”

Jack was speechless once more. It seemed like the two Rolls-Royce next to Fiona were compensation from the George family. Therefore, it was no surprise that his mother-in-law’s mood was too good to be true.

At this point in time, Ben and Xena came over to the crowd. When Xena noticed Jack’s piercing stares toward her, she instantly remembered Jack slaughtering the Motorbike Robbers. She was so frightened that she lowered her head, afraid of meeting his gaze.

“Xena, what’s the matter? Feeling uneasy due to my presence here?” Jack smiled coldly. He spared her life, but he never expected this liar would be this bold to stay by Ben’s side. This woman was a daredevil!

“Brother-in-law, what are you talking about? We’re a family. If you have anything else to say, let’s talk about it later at home! Besides, Xena had come clean to Pa and Ma. It was just a misunderstanding!” Ben stepped forward and defended Xena once he noticed the tense atmosphere between Jack and Xena.

“A misunderstanding?” Jack sneered. Were they saying that what he saw with his pair of eyes was only a misunderstanding?

“Yeah! She was drunk and trying to show off in front of her drink-buddies that she found a rich boyfriend, and...” Ben shrugged and glanced at Master George. “My dear brother-in-law, we’re at Master George’s place. There’s a crowd here; it wouldn’t be nice to talk over this thing here.”

“Fine. I’ll give you face since you’re calling me brother-in-law today.” Jack nodded, showing a light smile. “But, I hope that you won’t regret your decision in the future.”

Jack knew it very well that when Ben called him brother-in-law, Ben was hoping Jack would not probe

further on the topic. Moreover, Fiona and Andrew had forgiven Xena. It would be oversensitive of him, aiming at Xena on purpose.

Chapter 362

Xena heaved in relief when she knew Jack could not do anything to her, even if he was upset.

Ben and Fiona took her side and defended her. This left Jack no choice but to give up even if he wanted to murder her. Jack was calculative, though; he did not poke her bubble of lies right then and there. It seemed that this guy would be extremely difficult to deal with. Xena thought to herself that she had to be careful in front of him in the future. Otherwise, she would be giving the game away.

“Let’s move. It’s getting late, and we’ve already made reservations at the hotel diner,” Master George chortled and announced.

Right as Master George spoke, Sharon walked out of the house.

“Jack, I just can’t thank you enough! The pill was so effective!” Sharon rushed to Jack when she spotted him.

“Oh my goodness! She...” Selena clasped a hand over her mouth as she found it hard to believe her eyes. “Miss Sharon has lost a lot of weight! You’re only around 80 to 85 kilograms now, right? You look fitter now! If you lose another 15 kilograms tomorrow, you’ll look even better. Not only that, but judging by your features, you’d be a very stunning lady after you lose weight!”

“Thank you for the compliment, Sis!” Sharon blushed. “If only I was half as good-looking as you after I lost some weight.”

“You’ll look good, no doubt about it!” Selena managed to squeeze an awkward smile, even though she had an internal battle when Sharon called her ‘Sis’. Last night when Sharon proposed to Jack, she announced that if she ever got married to Jack, she would treat Selena like her dear sister. Of course, Selena was older than Sharon by a few years. She was not sure if she was oversensitive about this situation.

“The result is pretty good. Today’s just the first day, and the result is most obvious and effective on its first day! The outcome will be a little less effective tomorrow, weaker on the day after that, and so on.” Jack examined Sharon for a good while before adding, “However, after three days of treatment, you should have an ordinary body type that a normal girl should be having. The extra flesh and fats on your body are mostly accumulated toxins. Those fats shouldn’t be in your body.”

“B—but I only left one pill now. My dad stomped the other pill.” Sharon’s brows furrowed in an instant as she grumpily stared at her father.

Master George’s pallor was unsightly; he was embarrassed. How would he even know that the insignificant tiny black sh*t would be a magical pill?

“Ahem! This is, in fact, my mistake. That tiny thing looks black and has a bad odor. It really looked like a black sh*t! Furthermore, how could I possibly know that you, a veteran who just returned from the military, know about diet and losing weight...” Master George let out another dry cough to cover up his awkwardness. “Jack, you still have this pill, right? Since the whole treatment required three pills, can you give my daughter one more?”

Jack was still slightly annoyed that the George family kidnapped Fiona and the others away. If it was not because they did not take Selena and Kylie away, Jack would have burst and been hostile from the start.

Now when he saw the other man asking for the pill with a bright smile on his face, Jack sneered, “Of course I have the pill. However, as I’ve told Miss Sharon before, this medicine of mine is very costly, and I gave her the first three pills as a gift! If you want another one, I won’t give it for free. You’ll have to buy it.”

“What? This man is too much! How could he ask money for one tiny pill when our Master George has invited them to a six-star hotel and even gave them two almost brand-new Rolls Royces!”

“I agree! He’s too much! How could he not give face to our Master George?”

Some of the Georges whispered among them, discussing and commenting over Jack's behavior. Based on their experience with others, Jack should be smiling and offering the pill to Master George to please him, like the others! Never did they expect that this punk would ask Master George to pay for the medicine.

"Jack, what nonsense are you talking about?" Fiona quickly interjected when she overheard the heated discussion among the George family. She was afraid of offending them. Why was Jack unafraid of displeasing them? The George family was a first-class aristocratic family, after all.

Chapter 363

Fiona stepped forward and glared at Jack. "It's just a pill, Jack. Why did you ask for money? Master George treated us well! He gave us two Rolls-Royces, too. What else do you want?"

"She's right! Jack, aren't you being too greedy and ignorant? Can't you just give it to Master George since he only needs one?" Xena snarled as she followed after Fiona.

This was the perfect opportunity and time to please the George family! Was he an idiot? How could he ask for money and not consider the other party?

Jack did not budge in the slightest at their friendly reminder as though he was as deaf as a post.

He flashed an indifferent smile after a while and replied, "Those two Rolls-Royces are the compensation from Master George for kidnapping you guys, while the money I asked for is for the pill. Two different things. Besides, my medicine is expensive! If it's not for the kind-hearted Miss Sharon, I wouldn't sell it even if you kneel and beg!"

This was the first time Master George met a person like Jack. Embarrassment washed over him in an instant. Nonetheless, the George family was loaded. It would not be an issue as long as it could be solved with money.

"It should be this way," he replied with a small smile. "Jack is right. I should pay for the medicine!"

Pausing for a moment, he then asked, "Tell me, how much is it?"

"It's not a lot. 20 million will do. Great value for a great product."

"20 million? Why don't you steal or rob? It's just a pill, and you asked for 20 million?" A woman from the George family exclaimed angrily. She could not bear it anymore. This was blackmail in plain sight, not a regular business!

"Jack..." Even Selena showed slight annoyance at Jack's answer. 20 million was too expensive for a pill. Was Jack not afraid of upsetting them?

"Honey, you have to believe me! I'm not speaking nonsense!" Jack explained, showing a bitter smile.

"It doesn't matter. 20 million it is, then!" Master George did not show any hint of hesitation. He then called for his butler. "Butler, apply for a card and deposit 20 million in it. Sent it to the hotel once done. We'll make a move to the hotel for dinner first."

"Yes, Sir!" The butler nodded and left the compartment along with a few bodyguards.

"W—what? Master George really paid for it?" Fiona swallowed hard. She initially thought that Master George would be infuriated, but he did not. He even paid for the 20-million medicine. It was 20 million!

Jack took out a black pill and handed it to Sharon. "Miss Sharon, keep it well. Don't let it stomped into powder again this time!"

"Alright, don't worry. I'll keep it safe!" Sharon chuckled.

Not long after, they all arrived at the main door of the six-star Dynasty Hotel.

“F*ck! Isn’t that the George family? Should we go and say something nice to please them?” On the other side, Ken Clark, who had just got off the car, whispered to Ivan Taylor who was next to him.

Ivan took a closer look, and his eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers that they almost fell out. “Am I seeing things? T—That person looks like Jack White, the veteran, and that one looks like Selena Taylor. Huh? What? The whole family is here! And why are they with the George family?”

Chapter 364

The George family, a first-class aristocratic family in Eastfield. Even a second-class aristocratic family like the Clarks could not wait to please them! Of course, those like the Taylor family were even more eager to make friends with them! Such an opportunity would not come easily.

Yet, there they were. Ken and Ivan saw Jack and his family walking together with the George family toward the six-star hotel!

“This is weird. Under normal circumstances, many people would want to invite the George family over to dinner so badly just to please them. These people might not even show up even if you sincerely invited them!”

“Hmmm. Could it be that today Jack invited them to dinner?” Ken murmured as he stared at them from behind.

“Impossible! This is a six-star hotel, and it’s very costly to consume here. Does that punk have the money to spend in such a place? Moreover, it’d be a shame for the George family to dine at the regular table, so he should at least get a private room and order fine liquor to please them, no? The cost will be at least one or two million, don’t you think so?” Ken’s forehead creased.

Suddenly, his eyes lit up as if he had thought of something. “By the way, I heard that Selena Taylor is the procurement manager in Drake Dynasty Real Estate which belongs to the Drake family.”

“Yes...but how is it related to the dinner?” Ivan asked.

“I heard that the George family wants to be involved in the construction material business recently. They’ve already acquired a construction material factory that was about to shut down and are preparing to spearhead a big project,” Ken explained. “Hmm... Do you think it’s possible that the George family wanted to collaborate with the Drake family in the South Hill Real Estate project?”

Ken thought for a while and carried on, “After all, this South Hill Real Estate project is a piece of juicy meat. This project could rake up a profit of 7 or 8 billion, no sweat.”

Ivan’s face distorted when he heard Ken’s words. “No, don’t say it. You’re wrong... F*ck, you’re right. It’s possible!” Ivan swore. “Selena is cunning. She said she’d consider collaborating with me the last time I met her, making me feel like there’s still hope to sign a contract, but I never expected her to be such a fake b*tch and invite the George family to dinner so she could get a favor or two.”

Ken slapped his own forehead. “Now I remember!” he exclaimed. “Young Master Taylor, your family is directly involved in the construction material business, right? How did Selena not think of the Taylor family first? She’s one of the Taylors. Shouldn’t she take care of her own family first?”

Ivan’s feature was even more distorted than before. “Hmph! Who knows how this woman’s brain works. She behaves well and filially in front of Grandpa Taylor and would always say she’ll make the Taylors greater than before. Now, however, I see that’s all changed.” Ivan paused for a while before he added, “I think it’s all because I’m now the family’s general manager, thus helping our family would ultimately be helping me. She wants to be the heir, so if she gives this project to the Taylor family, my position as the heir would be rubber-stamped!”

“I see,” Ken nodded. “It seems like Selena isn’t as innocent and kind as we see her. Something seems odd about her being the procurement manager with such a high salary in the Drake family’s company, and Jack being their bodyguard with an even ridiculously higher salary.”

“Son of a b*tch.” Flabbergasted, Ivan could only sigh. “Young Master Clark, you knocked some sense into me. You made me open my eyes.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Ken was puzzled.

Chapter 365

“That’s why Miss Tanya treats Selena and Jack all too kindly. This is the truth. I knew it!”

Ivan looked as though he could see the light at the end of the tunnel. “Think about it this way. Jack’s a punk who has only served as a soldier. Though he’s skilled, the Drake family is so wealthy. It’s so easy for them to recruit a good bodyguard! Why do they pay him 20 million a month?”

Ivan allowed his words to sink in before he added, “Selena’s salary is quite high as well, but she’s a procurement manager, so it’s reasonable to be this high. Only Jack’s salary makes no sense; it’s too much! The pay he’s getting only makes sense if it’s Selena’s. It’ll be obvious that they’re doing something under the table if they pay Selena 20 million a month!”

Ken seemed to have thought of something. “Are you saying that the Drake family wanted to pay Selena 20 million a month but are afraid of raising suspicion? And that’s why they pay Jack 20 million instead?” Ken hypothesized.

“Bingo!” Ivan patted Ken on his shoulder and began, “Now, I’m pretty sure that there’s something fishy going on between either Selena and Young Master Drake or Selena and Master Drake! The 20-million salary only makes sense if we put it that way. What Miss Tanya said about Selena and Jack—that she’s a capable manager and he’s a skilled veteran—are all bullsh*t to me. I have a hunch that Miss Tanya only uses this as an excuse!” he continued.

Ken stayed astonished. “So that’s the truth! Damn! Selena is such a shameless wh*re, selling her soul and body in order to get the life she desired! I thought the Drake family really appreciated their capability for a moment! Now that after Young Master Taylor has analyzed the situation thoroughly, I finally realized Selena is a lying b*tch!”

Resentment grew inside Ken like a tumor as he spoke. He was good-looking—at least better than Michael Wilson—and filthy rich! If Selena wanted money, she could marry him. Instead, she went to find someone from the Drake family—perhaps the old master Drake—in secret and rejected him. When he thought of this, his edge of irritation had returned. What was bad about him? Was he worse than an old man?

]

“How cunning. If the Drake family pays Selena 20 million dollars a month, everyone will suspect that she’s being taken care of by a sugar-daddy. But, if this 20 million is given to Jack, they’ll never focus on Selena, let alone doubt her. Of course, it might puzzle them as to why Jack’s salary is ridiculously high!” Ken clenched his fists as he trembled with rage.

“I, too, didn’t expect this dear cousin of mine will be this manipulative and crafty! Looks like I have to take precautions against her in the future. Otherwise, the Taylor family’s property will one day fall into her hands!” Ivan flashed a wry smile.

At this moment, another car came into the scene. Neil Hugo, Young Master of the Hugo family, got out of the car. “Both of you arrived so early; much earlier than me!” he spoke. “What are you two talking about?”

“Talking about a b*tch!” Ken’s fists were still tightly clenched, hot with anger.

“Who is it? Come, let’s discuss it together,” Neil spoke with great interest in his voice.

“Selena Taylor!” Ivan sneered. “Who else do you think it could be?”

“No way. I think she’s a pretty good woman!” Neil furrowed, unable to digest their thoughts. Selena looked kind and gentle; why did they compare her to a b*tch?

After a short while, Ivan and Ken shared all their assumptions and analysis with Neil.

Neil, too, clenched his fist after hearing it. “Hmph! It’s true that there are no good women in this world! Most of them are gold-diggers and love money to death... Selena Taylor is no different!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 366-370

Chapter 366

“Young Master Hugo, Selena Taylor is a lot more powerful than we thought. We just saw her family dining at the hotel with the George family...” Ken forced a smile as he told Neil about Selena potentially collaborating with the George family on a construction project.

Having said that, he then added, “Just think about it. If she didn’t give the George family any benefits, why would they treat them to a meal?”

Ivan glanced at the sports cars by the side, then blurted, “These people from the George family are truly generous. To think that they would chauffeur people around with Rolls-Royces. D*mn it. I’ve never sat in a Rolls-Royce before!”

“Nevermind. It’s not like we can prevent this now, can we?” Neil made a strained laugh before speaking to Ivan. “Young Master Taylor, you mentioned about asking us out for a drink. What is the matter?”

“let’s go. There’s a decent bar there. Let’s go drink as we discuss!” Ivan laughed out loudly, then led the two of them to a small bar.

After arriving at the bar, they ordered some drinks and took a seat. Only then did Ivan speak up. “To be frank, I’ve heard that you both fancy my cousin sister! Is that so?”

Neil took a sip of the drink in his hand, then laughed coldly. “That’s indeed the case, but what can we do? Selena just won’t give me any chance. Especially now that her husband is back and she loves that daughter of hers. it’s just too difficult to get my hands on her! Previously, I’ve even come up with a plan with Young Master Clark, but it failed!”

Young Master Clark felt dejected as he recalled how Fiona almost accepted the 100 million dollars from him. He then downed the drink in his hand in one gulp.

He smiled dryly, then said, “I’m the most unfortunate one. I’ve already been friends with Selena for a few years. If not for Jack coming back all of a sudden, I believe I’d be dating her now!”

Having said that, he then shot another look at Neil. “Back then, Young Master Hugo hadn’t even seen

her. You've only seen her much later!"

"the reason I ask for both of you to come is to think of a solution! Jack had assaulted me previously, and Selena is a competitor in inheriting the Taylor family assets. Although she's currently kicked out of the family, I can't let my guard down! After all, my grandfather said that as long as Jack could fulfill his promise when the time comes, then all the things in the past would be water under the bridge. Their entire family will once again be taken back to the Taylor family!"

At this point, Ivan laughed as he told them his reason for asking them out.

"Young Master Taylor, you've taken the right move to look for us. After all, you're enemies with them, and we want to have Jack killed. Our end goal is more or less the same!" Ken laughed, then added, "Oh yeah, what did Jack promise?!"

"Oh, there were three conditions..." Ivan immediately told both of them what happened previously. "If Jack fails to fulfill his promise when the time comes, he has to get out of the Taylor family and divorce Selena. He would have to roll out of the house, not walk!"

Unexpectedly, Ken and Neil were making a pained smile when they heard it.

Neil stated bluntly, "Jack is currently working for the Drake family with a monthly salary of 20 million dollars. Although it's only a short time before Old Master Taylor's birthday, Jack could ask for an advance payment of two months without an issue. Moreover, if we're not mistaken, Selena might be having an affair with Young Master Drake, or even James Drake. If that's the case, wouldn't money be a simple matter to them?"

Hearing that, Ivan's expression immediately darkened. "If that's the case, all the more reason for us to not wait around!"

Chapter 367

"Young Master Taylor, do you have any ideas? We've tried our best but have yet to formulate a good plan. The last time we planned to have Fiona poison Jack, but we never expected her to be so cowardly

despite her love for money!” Ken said after looking at Ivan.

Ivan then replied, “I think it’s unlikely to have Jack divorce Selena. They’re quite close. Meanwhile, it’s very difficult to have him killed as he’s good at fighting. I’m afraid none of your bodyguards are his match!” Having said that, Ivan made a faint smile before continuing, “However, I have another idea! We’ll hire a hitman!”

“hitman? Some hitmen might be worse off than our family’s regular bodyguard!” Neil burst into laughter instantly, “Young Master Taylor, here I thought you might have some ingenious plan for calling us over. In the end, that’s all you can come up with?”

However, Ivan smirked before replying, “Young Master Hugo, do you think that I’ll be hiring a regular hitman? I’m talking about the elites, those at the top of the list among hitmen!”

Seeing Young Master Hugo and Ken being intrigued, Ivan finally added, “Most importantly, I’ve found someone to contact this hitman. It’s a woman, a seductress. It’s easiest for a man to let his guard down around women. Moreover, if she used her charms, the chances of success would naturally be much higher!”

“If you put it that way, we can give it a try! If this can get Jack killed, then Selena wouldn’t choose to be a widow for life, right? Once Jack’s dead, our chance will come!” Ken’s eyes brightened as he saw a glimmer of hope.

Indeed, they could not afford to drag this on. If they did, it would be too passive. Moreover, if Selena and Jack’s feelings for each other developed over time, that would be even more troublesome. They need to take this chance where Jack had just come back. Five years of separation meant that their feelings for each other were not as strong. Jack’s death would be the key.

“However, it’s going to be very costly to hire a hitman just like that. This woman is ranked fifth on the hitman leaderboard. She would only accept big contracts!”

“I’ve inquired. Her price is 150 million dollars for her to take the hit!” Ivan forced a smile, then looked at the two.

“I understand your intention. You’re thinking of having us pay part of it, right?” Neil chuckled, then took out the atm card he prepared for Fiona earlier. “Here’s 100 million dollars. You can’t have us pay for everything, right? You’ll pay for the 50 million dollars yourself.”

“No problem. Rest assured, this hitman is really good. Not only is she good at disguising herself, but she can even completely change her appearance! I’ve heard that quite a few experts died in her hands! She will stick to her mission. Once accepted, she will go through all means to get rid of the target! Moreover, it’s a guaranteed success within five days!” Ivan stated confidently.

“nice working with you!”

The three of them toasted in laughter.

Chapter 368

Meanwhile, while Jack and the others were halfway through their meal, the George family’s butler came and passed an atm card to Jack, along with the password written on a note.

Seeing Jack getting that much money, Selena, Fiona, and the others were all in a rather good mood. With that, everyone had a happy meal. After enjoying their meal, they finally left the hotel.

Meanwhile, Master George was also very courteous, asking for Jack’s family to visit them at their place to hang out if they were free. After Master George and the others have departed, Jack finally approached Fiona and passed her the atm card along with the note.

“Mother, here’s the 20 million dollars I’ve promised you previously as Selena’s betrothal gift. Since I have the money now, I’ll pass it to you in advance!” Jack stated sincerely with a smile.

“W-w-what a surprise!” Fiona’s heart was delighted beyond measure.

For the past two days, she was regretting her rejection of that 100 million dollars. Who would have known that Jack would pass her 20 million dollars right now? With the 20 million dollars, Fiona's mood immediately improved greatly. After all, she had gotten that money in her hands without doing anything that would burden her conscience.

"Take it. This is what I've promised you previously. I always keep my promises!" Jack placed the atm card in her hand.

"Wonderful. My daughter made the right choice! I really didn't expect you to know medicine! It seems like the past few years of suffering that we went through was worth it!" Holding onto the card with 20 million dollars, Fiona was stuck with a smile on her face.

Meanwhile, Selena felt speechless. With the 20 million dollars in hand, her mother's attitude made a complete change.

"So, would you acknowledge me as your son-in-law now? Are we a family?" Jack asked with a pained smile.

"Of course. Why won't I acknowledge you? You've kept your promise, which shows that you're responsible. Moreover, your current salary is considered quite good. If we worked a little harder, then we'll be getting richer in the future, right?" Fiona laughed while speaking. Needless to say, she was on cloud nine.

However, Andrew instead was frowning. "You've settled 20 million dollars, but you're still short of another 20 million dollars. Although you can have the Drake family advance your salary for a month, there's still the gift that's worth 10 million dollars. A gift like that is not easy to find. Have you planned that out yet? Furthermore, this is the old master's 70th birthday. The gift should be meaningful!"

Jack grinned mysteriously. "Father-in-law, don't you worry about that. I'll settle it! I know that some people in the Taylor family are waiting to watch me embarrass myself, right? I'm afraid they'll have to be disappointed when the time comes."

“Alright, since you’re confident, I’ll leave it to you!” Andrew nodded. He was confident that Jack would not lie to him.

The whole group then happily returned home. The next morning, Jack went to work early. Meanwhile, with the cash in hand, Fiona went out with her rich auntie friends for a shopping trip.

Of course, the reason she went shopping was to show off, to let others know that she was no longer broke. She was once again like them, a rich person who could afford to buy an expensive handbag if she so wanted to.

Chapter 369

Inside a private room of a hotel, a woman with excellent physique quickly opened the door, allowing Ivan, Ken, and Neil to enter. The three looked at the woman before them and was slightly taken aback. The woman’s body was gorgeous. At the same time, she also gave off a prideful charm that was irresistible for men.

“You’re Shadow?” After taking his seat, Ivan took out an atm card. “Here’s 150 million. The password is 000000.”

The woman took a look at the card, her face expressionless. It was as though part of a routine. She took a whiff of the cigarette in her hand, speaking slowly, “Give me the details of that kid, including his picture and his family situation. I want to know everything!”

Ivan placed the atm card aside, then took out a document folder and passed it to her.

She started studying it carefully. After a while, she finally asked skeptically, “Is this guy just a bodyguard? He’s been a soldier for five years? He was recently discharged from service? How can you fail to take care of someone like this? It can’t be. You guys are somewhat influential people in Eastfield, are you not?”

“Ma’am, that’s not all. This kid is quite strong. Our Clark family’s top fighter was advising me not to

offend this kid as he was no match for him! From that, you can tell that this kid's combat power is very strong!" Ken immediately explained.

"I think it's not that he's strong, but your men are too weak!" The woman chuckled, her gaze carrying a hint of disgust.

"I heard that you've taken several dozen missions and completed all of them. Is that true?" Neil asked after some thoughts, taking a step forward.

However, Shadow gave him a terrifying glare immediately, causing him to take a step back from fear with her terrifying killing intent.

"You dare question my ability? I'm ranked fifth in the southwestern hitman leaderboard! Watch your words. I might not be confident when it comes to those King of War or God of War, but all those other generals, assistant commanders, or head commanders are just easy pickings! In fact, when I take on a different appearance, the targets won't even know what hit them. Perhaps a King of War might fall to my assassination too! Of course, I've never met a King of War in person. However, I'm sure it's merely a title, nothing much!" The woman before them grinned, then said, "You think this person you see is the real me? within Daxia, I'm afraid there are less than 10 people that have seen my actual appearance!"

The trio gasped. At first, they thought the beautiful woman was her real identity, but they never expected her appearance to be a disguise.

"Alright, you three, wait here for a moment!" The woman's mouth quickly curled upward, then she headed to the restroom.

In less than two minutes, the restroom door opened and Selena walked out from it, looking gentle and caring as she looked at them. However, she was still wearing the sexy black mini skirt that the woman wore earlier.

She appeared shocked, then asked in surprise, "Ivan, what are you guys doing here?"

“Selena!” Ken was surprised. How did Selena get here? Did she overhear what they said earlier?

“She’s not Selena! That voice is not right!” Ivan frowned, then said, “Shadow, you may look exactly the same as the picture, but what are you going to do about the voice? Wouldn’t you be exposed unless you refrain from speaking?”

Chapter 370

“the voice is different!” Right then, the Selena before them burst out laughing. Meanwhile, her sound had changed to be like Ivan, exactly the same.

“Hh-how did you use my voice?” Ivan took a deep breath. ‘Is this the capabilities of an expert hitman that ranked fifth in the southwestern hitman leaderboard?’ That was too terrifying. His voice was mimicked just like that. Moreover, it was exactly the same.

“tell me. If I transfigured into your appearance and used your voice, would the others still be able to identify me?” the Selena before them spoke once more in Ivan’s voice.

“Amazing, simply amazing!” Ken exclaimed in astonishment. Everything felt too surreal.

If the woman before her was not a hitman, he would have asked her how much it would cost to spend a night with him. After all, after she transfigured into Selena, that appearance was just too similar.

“Is that so?” Unexpectedly, the Selena before them smiled at Ken, her voice changing once again to mimic his.

“Oh my god, this is unbelievable. I’m sure you can trick him. No matter how good Jack is, as long as he can’t tell you apart, you can ambush him with a fatal blow. He’ll be dead for sure!” Neil said confidently, overjoyed.

“Is that so? it seems this man is quite the lecher. It should be an easy job!” The Selena before them smiled seductively, her voice quickly turned into Neil’s voice. “As of now, I’ve not met this woman nor heard her voice. That’s why I can’t mimic it. However, I’ll appear near her as a stranger to learn her voice and secretly observe to learn her movements and expressions. Very soon, I’ll be able to fool everyone!”

“We’ll put the voice aside for now. If not for us witnessing it with our own eyes, we would have mistaken you as Selena!” Ivan laughed, then added, “To be honest, while on our way here, we’re quite worried if this 150 million dollars was worth it. It seems it’s worth every penny!”

“rest assured. Give me five days. In five days, this kid will be dead for sure! If he still lives after five days, I’ll refund 50 million dollars to you. I guarantee that he will die within 10 days!” the woman before them stated, chuckling.

“We believe you. Seeing you today is an eye-opener!”

Although they each paid 50 million dollars, Ivan felt the greater pressure. However, if that would get Jack killed, he was more than happy to pay it. Apart from still feeling bitter over Jack hitting him, Jack’s death would mean that Selena would probably be married to a rich family like Neil’s. If she was married, then she would no longer be part of the family and have no stake in the Taylor family’s assets.

“Alright, you should leave. I’ve just flown over and am still exhausted from my trip. I’ll rest up and start tomorrow. Tomorrow will be the first day!” Shadow looked at the trio and told them to leave.

Very quickly the trio left the hotel.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 371-375

Chapter 371

“That woman’s body is stunning. I think her butt is even perkier than Selena’s” After arriving at the plaza outside the hotel, Neil could not resist swallowing his saliva. “Too bad she’s a hitman. If only she was an escort. I’d be willing to pay high prices for this woman!”

“That’s right. Such a beautiful flower, yet it had to be a rose with thorns!” Ken joined in amusement. “Next we can just sit back, relax, and wait for the good news from her!”

Neil nodded, then said to Ivan, “Young Master Taylor, if the hitman contacts you about Jack’s death, you must notify us right away. Us brothers shall have a good celebration!”

Hearing that, Ivan’s heart was overjoyed. Although the Taylor family was just a third-class aristocratic family, Young Master Hugo and Young Master Clark belonged to second-class aristocratic families. For them to address him as a brother, it was apparent that he was not seen as an outsider. If he could establish a good connection with them, then it would definitely be beneficial for the future growth of the Taylor family’s business.

“Sure. When the time comes, we must make a grand celebration!” Ivan nodded with a smile as they continued forward.

However, after a moment of their departure, Ivan seemed to recall something. He asked, “Oh, you told me that you failed to have Fiona poison Jack, right?”

“Yeah. That Fiona loves money so much, yet she ended up saying she didn’t want to kill someone. Isn’t that just annoying?!” Ken felt his frustration grow the more he thought about it.

“Where’s the poison? Pass it to me. I’ve just thought of someone that might be able to help us. We should keep the poison for now. If the hitman fails to kill him, I’ll think of something with the poison. I’ll make sure Jack drinks this!” Ivan’s gaze gave off an evil feeling.

“That works too. There’s not much use for us to keep it anyway. It might be more useful for you as you’re from the Taylor family. You’ll have more opportunity to use it than us!” Ken nodded, then took out the poison and passed it to Ivan. “Do note that this poison is slow acting. It’s colorless and odorless when mixed in water. After drinking it, one would appear normal. However, in a month, the body will slowly deteriorate and eventually, the person will die.”

“Is that so? That’s even better. When the time comes, who would think of what happened a month ago, or even what they have eaten or drank? This poison is perfect for killing!” Ivan received the poison happily.

...

Meanwhile, within Selena’s office...

Sonia came before Selena and passed some documents and files to her. “Manager Taylor, here are some materials from the construction material supplier and the company intro. I’ve taken a look and they seem to be decent, especially this Marvel Construction Material Company. I think the materials from this company are quite good, and the pricing is reasonable!”

Having said that, Sonia paused for a moment before continuing, “Of course, the final decision is yours to make. This is just my suggestion.”

Hearing those words, Selena frowned. Marvel Construction Material Company was the biggest subsidiary company of the Taylor family,

In the past two days, she was still hesitating on this matter. She wanted to help Ivan, yet she was worried that it would generate gossip behind her back, claiming that she was misusing her power. However, if she rejected Ivan and refused to work with the Taylor family, her grandfather might not be happy. After all, their ability to rise to a second-class aristocratic family was very important to the Taylor family. Her grandfather waited forever for such a day.

“You can just leave it here. I’ll check through it carefully and let you know the results later!”

Chapter 372

After Sonia went out, Selena sat behind her desk frowning, still feeling hesitant. She had carefully read through those materials. It was obvious that among the suppliers, the Taylor family was the most prominent construction material supplier. Meanwhile, the other suppliers were no match for the Taylor

family. Most importantly, they would not be able to handle such a big project. However, Selena knew full well that Sonia was hiding something. With them running such a big project, it was a tempting opportunity. It was impossible for the other companies that could rival the Taylor family to not compete. Hence, there must be some documents that Sonia has kept hidden from her.

Nevertheless, that was actually a good thing for her. She had originally planned to help the Taylor family, and the quality of their construction materials were honestly good. Of course, she naturally wished for the Taylor family to grow stronger as well. That way, Old Master Taylor would be able to fulfill his lifelong dream, promoting the Taylor family from a third-class aristocratic family to a second-class aristocratic family. That was an opportunity of a lifetime. If she missed this chance, it would be very difficult for her to find such an opportunity again.

This time, she could just leave things like it is and play dumb. She only needed to feign ignorance. After all, Sonia was the one doing the manipulation instead of her, pre-signing her name on it. That meant that if anything were to happen, it would be Sonia's fault.

"Things should be fine. Although Ivan can be terrible at times, this is a good opportunity for him. There was no way he would ruin such a good opportunity. Moreover, the Taylor family's quality is comparable to other high-end construction material suppliers!" Selena could not resist muttering after some considerations.

However, she quickly added, "But this is such a big project. I can't give them everything. If everything is allocated to the Taylor family, that would attract gossip. Why not I allocate eighty percent to the Taylor family and I'll find another suitable supplier for the remaining twenty percent!" After finally coming to a decision, Selena finally gave her grandfather a call.

"Selena? Why are you calling this old man all of a sudden?" Old Master Taylor was slightly surprised when receiving Selena's call.

Selena chuckled, then asked, "Grandfather, how's your health? It's your seventieth birthday in sixteen days. Is there anything you like? I'll see if I can get it for you by then!"

"I'm old. My body is getting weaker each day. I'm almost seventy years old, how healthy can I be?!" The

old master chuckled before answering, "As for the gift, there's really nothing much that can pique my interest now. To me, all those gold necklaces and jade pendants can be described in one word, pretentious!"

Having said that, before Selena could say anything, the old man could not resist questioning, "That's right, Selena, you know that this old man loves his reputation. Moreover, I've cared for you greatly when you were young. I just can't bear to have you married to a delivery boy. That's why to avoid being the laughing stock of others, I had no choice but to chase you out of the family!"

Chapter 373

Having said that, Old Master Taylor paused for a moment before asking, "Are you still angry at Grandpa for that?"

Selena forced a smile. "I know Grandpa's attitude quite well. Back then I was stubborn too. It was out of spite that I was pregnant with my daughter. However, I find that Jack is a decent guy and my daughter is very cute as well. There's nothing much for me to regret. As for other people gossiping, that's their business. I have to live for myself!"

The old master sighed, then said, "It seems that despite my old age, I've not lived my life as fully as you had! Oh right, I heard that you're in charge of the South Hill Real Estate's construction materials procurement? Have you found a suitable collaborator for the project? I know that it's a little difficult for you at this position, as others would gossip."

Selena kept quiet. At first, she thought that her grandfather would persuade her to sign a deal with the Taylor family. She did not expect him to be considerate of her position and say such things.

The old master then said, "If it's too difficult for you, you can give this a try. After all, our Taylor family didn't do too well these past few years. You just need to give us a share, even if just thirty percent of the project. That way, even if we can't rise to a second-rate aristocratic family, we would still be able to get a breather and help boost our company performance for the past years!"

From his tone of voice, Selena could tell that he felt helpless. There was even a hint of begging.

The old master had always placed great importance on his reputation. It was almost impossible for him to be humble, and even then it would be forced. It was also on the grounds of the Taylor family's future that he would say such words. Selena felt touched by his actions.

At that moment, the kind-hearted Selena could not help but smile warmly. "Grandpa, the main reason I called you was to talk about this matter. The supervisor had just passed me all the information of several potential construction material suppliers. After taking a look, within the few companies, our Taylor family is very competitive and our quality is decent!"

Hearing that, the old master was delighted, asking immediately, "Y-y-you mean that we have hope? How much of a share would we get on the project?"

Hearing her grandfather's excited voice on the phone reminded her of his affection back when she was young. Selena laughed, then changed her plans. "I've decided to give the Taylor family eighty-five percent of the project, while the others will be shared among other competitors."

"Eighty-five percent!?" The old master breathed in deeply. That was beyond his expectations. It showed that Selena was intentionally favoring the Taylor family.

The old master's eyes turned slightly red. "Selena, I'm very touched that you can let bygones be bygones. I've also thought it through. There's no point in those gifts. All that's important is that Jack is sincere. Even if he can't produce a gift worth 10 million dollars, I'll still acknowledge him as my grandson-in-law and take all of you back!" Having said that, the old master warned her, "However, don't you tell him about this. We need to give him some pressure. If you tell him in advance, this kid might not work hard!"

Hearing that, Selena could not help resist a chuckle. "Alright, I'll keep it a secret from him. Grandpa, looking at how confident he is, I believe he should be able to come up with the money. Also, please keep today's matter a secret. I'll ask Ivan to come over and sign the contract. As for the price, just follow the market price!"

"Yes, of course!" The old master nodded, feeling satisfied. Eighty-five percent! They might be able to make a profit of 5 to 6 hundred million dollars! That was more than enough to bring them into the ranks

of a second-class aristocratic family.

Chapter 374

After the call, Old Master Taylor remained seated on the sofa and sighed. “Sigh, Selena is still the best. Even after being chased out of the family and picked on by Ivan, she would still think of the bigger picture at a critical time like this. Instead, Ivan is just useless!”

After Selena put down her phone, she had Rosa summon Sonia over.

“Manager Taylor, are you looking for me?” Sonia had a plastic smile on her face. It could not be helped. For money and her future, she could only keep it all in when working in front of Selena while keeping a smile on.

It seemed that she was not keeping a grudge from their past. Of course, until now, she still could not understand how Selena’s husband, a mere bodyguard, dared to slap her in front of her uncle. In the end, not only did Jack not get reprimanded by the Drake family, but they instead sided with him. It made her suspect if the rumor she spread about Selena to ruin her reputation, where she had an affair with Young Master Drake, was true. Only then would it make sense for the Drake family to help Selena and her husband so much.

“I’ve had a look and this company does look good. However, our project is too big so we can’t leave it all to them. I’m afraid it might affect their quality when they rush their deadlines.” Selena stated calmly with a faint smile.

Hearing that, Sonia was overjoyed. It seems the Taylor family would be getting it, but as to how big a portion of the project, that was unclear. Ivan had promised her that if the contract was signed, even if they were only allocated with forty-five percent of the project, she would still be getting 20 million dollars of commission. With 20 million dollars, she would be able to afford luxury handbags and not have to worry.

With that thought, she quickly suppressed her excitement and asked carefully, “Manager Taylor, I think this Marvel Construction Material Company is quite promising, or I wouldn’t be recommending them to

you. Their reputation is really good! I believe you know that already! So, how much of the project are you allocating to them?"

Selena smiled, then stated, "Eighty-five percent. I'll pick others for the remainder!"

"Wow, that's quite a lot!" Sonia grinned, feeling elated. She never thought that she would really get her hands on the 20 million dollars.

Selena looked at her, then frowned, "Why do you seem so happy? You seem to care a lot about this company, don't you?"

"N-n-no! I'm just hoping that it could be settled earlier after working on this for so long. If we can't decide on one, I'll have to start looking for other construction material suppliers again!" Feeling spooked, Sonia quickly explained.

"Mm, what about this. You bring Ivan over tomorrow to sign the deal. I know that the company belongs to the Taylor family, but they really earned this project by showing their capability!" Selena's expression remained calm all the while.

"Alright, I'll call him right now to contact them!" Sonia nodded, then quickly thought of something, asking, "Manager, what about the price? Do we follow the stated price?"

Selena forced a smile, then said, "Tell them that they have to lower the price by five percent. Their price is just a little too much!"

"Yes, manager!" Sonia then happily left the room.

Ivan, who was drinking at a bar, quickly received a call from Sonia.

“Hello, Supervisor Neal, how are things going? Any progress?” Ivan asked casually after accepting the call.

He knew that Selena was stubborn. Even if they were to be given the project, it would not be that quick as she would make him wait for a while.

Chapter 375

As for not giving them any part of the project, he did not think that was possible. After all, he had already told her previously that it was their grandfather’s idea. Selena was kind and filial. For their grandfather, she would at least give them some part of the project.

“Come sign the contract tomorrow. Selena finally agreed, quite fast too! However, she wants to lower the price by five percent!” On the other end of the phone, Sonia laughed. “Congratulations Young Master Ivan for acquiring such a big project!”

“What?!” Ivan immediately stood up, feeling excited. “Go sign the contract tomorrow? Lowering it by five percent is no issue. The haggling is common practice. Moreover, the demand is not much, just a symbolic price reduction!” Having said that, he immediately questioned further, “Oh, did you ask how much of this project is she allocating to us? It shouldn’t be the entire project, right?”

“Although it’s not the whole project, it’s still quite a surprise. Eighty-five percent! What do you think? Enough? I’ve put in quite a lot of good words for you!” Sonia quickly credited herself.

“Eighty-five? That’s wonderful. Relax, after signing the contract tomorrow, I’ll treat you and your boyfriend to a meal and settle your promised benefits!” Ivan almost jumped at the news.

With such a big project and the Taylor family getting eighty-five percent of it, that would be a sizable profit. Most importantly, with that, he believed that his grandfather would look at him in a new light. When the time comes, who else would he name as the heir of the Taylor family’s assets? The old master was already seventy years old. By the looks of it, he would not last much longer and would have to soon pass on his authority.

“Thank you, Young Master Taylor. I wish you good luck with your contract signing tomorrow. I’ll leave you to your business for now!” Sonia quickly ended the call.

“Wonderful, wonderful!” Ivan burst out into laughter, then called out at the waiter by the door, “Get me a few more girls in here. I need a good round of celebration!”

At five-thirty in the afternoon, with nothing much going on, Selena clocked out of work.

She never expected to see a woman right at the door, waiting with some documents in hand.

“Please leave. Our company’s door is not meant for just anyone. There are plenty of people looking for our company for projects. You can submit your documents and let the supervisor decide. She will then hand pass it on. That’s the procedure!” A guard was blocking the woman outside, persuading her, “You’ve been waiting for a few hours. Why don’t you go back? The sun is so strong. Aren’t you afraid of passing out from the heat?”

“It’s fine. I’ll just wait a little longer. Although our company is small, our quality and other aspects are all exceptional. We really hope to be able to work with South Hill Real Estate.” The woman seemed to be in her twenties. She was drenched in sweat from the scorching heat, but she still kept looking inside.

She quickly saw Selena and her eyes brightened. “Manager Taylor, can we have a talk?”

“Don’t run inside!” Seeing the woman running inward, the guard immediately held her back. “You’re sweating all over, how can you just run into the company like that?”

Selena looked at her, then approached and said, “There’s a cafe next door. We can have a seat there and talk about this!”

“S-s-sure. Thank you Manager Taylor for giving me this opportunity!” The woman nodded frantically, feeling overjoyed.

Selena smiled calmly. From here, she could see her old self when she started working for the Taylor family. Back then, she was just as headstrong.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 376-380

Chapter 376

“Manager Taylor, I-I-let me introduce myself. I’m Janet. Our family...how do I put it? Please don’t laugh at me, but we’re just a regular company. We’re not even considered a third-class aristocratic family! However, Jacob’s Construction Materials is really quite good. Our quality is decent. Oh yeah, I have some of our documents here. There are also some reviews from our clients after working with us!” Janet seemed to be nervous, but still courageously introduced herself to Selena.

Standing before her, Selena was already a successful female professional with a high position.

She heard that the Drake family was paying her a monthly salary of 1 million dollars. With that kind of pay, she was comparable to some directors.

“You even have reviews?” Selena was surprised and intrigued. After taking a careful look, she finally told Janet, “Your company does look good. I’ve heard of it before. Your reputation is decent!” Having said that, she paused for a moment before continuing, “I would like to hear you out.”

“Jacob’s Construction Materials prides ourselves in our quality. However, our company is not big, nor as well known as others. Therefore I don’t expect to be allocated that much work in this big project! Our main hope is that Manager Taylor would be able to allocate a small portion to us!” Having said her piece, Janet took a sip of her coffee, then asked carefully, “I wonder if we’ll have a chance of working with you?”

Seeing her sincerity, Selena finally smiled. “I’m about to sign the contract tomorrow. Eighty-five percent of this project has already been allocated! Although the remaining fifteen percent is not much, if you do it well, it should be no problem for you to earn 1 to 2 hundred million dollars. Therefore, our requirements for business partners are also quite stringent!”

Hearing that, Janet sighed in her heart. From Selena's tone, she most likely had no chance.

However, she quickly cheered up and smiled at Selena. "It's okay, I understand that the chances of working with you are very slim. Many from my family were even laughing at me, claiming that it's impossible to reach a deal. In fact, that's also within my expectations!"

Although Selena had already made up her mind, she still asked intentionally, "Since that's within your expectation, why did you come? Moreover, it's scorching hot outside. Why did you wait for so long?"

"Thing is, sometimes we have to try. If we never try, we'll never know. What if I got lucky?"

Having said that, Janet sat for a moment, then felt awkward and stood up to pay the bill. She then laughed and said, "Manager Taylor, it's a pity that we can't work together this time. However, I hope that we will have opportunities to work together in the future. This is my business card. I'll prove to you in the future that we're a good business partner!" Finishing her statement, she turned around and got ready to leave.

However, Selena laughed unexpectedly. She saw her old self on this young woman. Back when she was the general manager of the Taylor family's company, it was not given to her like Ivan. She had earned her place through her own hard work. Moreover, when she left the company, many employees cried because they loved her as a general manager.

"Wait a moment. I don't think I've said that we can't work together, right?" Selena laughed, then called out to Janet.

"Manager Taylor, y-y-you mean that..." When Janet heard that, she turned around with a look of astonishment on her face.

"What I meant to say was the remaining fifteen percent will all be given to you. I hope you don't let me down. You must make sure of the quality. As for the price, we'll follow the one you proposed. Come find me at my office tomorrow at nine-thirty in the morning to sign the contract!" Selena took a sip of her coffee and crossed her leg, yet somehow appearing graceful.

“That’s wonderful! Yes, yes! I’ll definitely reach on time tomorrow! I’ll go back immediately and draft out a proper contract!” Janet was elated, quickly taking her leave.

Chapter 377

“This girl!” Selena laughed before standing up and taking her leave as well.

However, she did not expect a sexy and seductive lady in shades seated nearby had been observing them for a long time. Only after Selena had left did the woman stand up and settle her bill before going out.

“What I meant to say was the remaining fifteen percent will all be given to you...” The corner of her lips curled up creepily. The voice she made was the exact copy of Selena’s voice.

That lady was none other than the hitman that ranked fifth in the southwestern hitman leaderboard, Shadow!

...

At the same time, Ivan had also happily returned home. Reaching home, he immediately called Cecilia and the other relatives over.

“Master Ivan, what’s the matter? You seem happy. Did something good happen?” A young man of the Taylor family asked, giggling.

“Excellent! Truly wonderful news!” Ivan’s body still reeked of alcohol. He looked at Theodore and Zeus, proclaiming, “Dad, Grandpa, we’ve finally gotten our hands on the project by South Hill Real Estate!”

“That’s wonderful. Master Ivan is truly amazing!”

“That’s right. You managed to obtain such a big project.”

Quite a number of the Taylor family members immediately started praising Ivan. Most of them were working at the Taylor family’s company, carrying out all sorts of positions. Ivan was the general manager, and now that he managed to secure such a big project, the authority within the Taylor family would eventually be in his grasp. That was why they had to get on his good side or risk having a rough future.

However, a number of them knew in their hearts that Selena had compromised for them to secure the project. If Selena was petty and held her grudge, it would be helpless even if Ivan begged on his knees.

“guess how much of this big project were we allocated with?” Ivan laughed out loud excitedly, then said, “At first, Selena was unagreeable and only planned to give us thirty percent. However, thanks to my quick thinking and persuasiveness, she finally made multiple compromises. In the end, we nailed it at eighty-five percent of the project!” Ivan intentionally placed a strong emphasis on the number eighty-five when he spoke, hoping to make the number stand out. His face filled with smugness.

“Master Ivan is truly awesome. You managed to negotiate for eighty-five percent!”

“That’s right. Selena is so petty to just provide us with thirty percent. That’s just too little. We’re all from the Taylor family after all. She has the blood of our Taylor family running within her!”

“That’s right. I think she’s being petty too. If it were me, even if I had to save my reputation, I would have at least set aside sixty percent of the project!”

The Taylor family members were all busy debating.

However, Zeus Taylor, the old master had a gloomy expression on his face. Selena had given him a call long ago and told him about the eighty-five percent allotment. She had even discussed it with him. Ivan probably did nothing, yet he dared to come back showing off and claiming credit. If not for trying to save Ivan’s reputation, Zeus would have exposed him right then and there.

Chapter 378

“Son, you’ve done well this time!” Theodore grinned as he gave Ivan, a big thumbs up. He was not a business-minded person and would spend his free time enjoying tea or fishing.

However, he had hope for his son to be successful. This time, Ivan had finally made him proud.

“Dad, it can’t be helped. It’s all for our Taylor family. It’s so that we can rise into the ranks of a second-class aristocratic family. This is something I’m willing to do even if I have to endure torturous hardships!” Ivan, being drunk, thumped his chest smugly. The arrogance he showed went without saying.

Zeus, on the other hand, could bear with it no longer. He steeled his face and asked, “Why not give your life as well?” Having said that, he gave a wave. “It’s getting late. Go get rested. Ivan, you should rest up too. Go sign the contract early in the morning. It’s only official after you sign the contract. Don’t be an embarrassment like the last time!”

“Don’t you worry, everything will be fine. I’ll guarantee to sign this contract tomorrow morning, or I’ll live stream myself eating sh*t for all of you to watch!” Ivan thumped his chest as he promised. This time, he had full confidence. After all, Selena had always kept her word. Since she had agreed to it, she would not go back on her words.

Moreover, the failed contract with the Wilson family previously was an accident. Since the old master sent them off, they quickly went away. Meanwhile, the old master should have gone back to sleep. Very soon, only Ivan and Theodore were left in the huge living room.

“Dad, it’s weird. Shouldn’t Grandpa be elated about this matter? Why do I feel that he seemed unhappy?” Ivan frowned, finally noticing something was off. He felt confused.

Theodore considered for a moment before saying, “I think it might be too late and he’s sleepy. Moreover, you reek of alcohol and behaved so insolently. Can your grandpa be happy? The last time you thoroughly embarrassed yourself and vomited all over the floor in the hotel really upset your grandpa!”

Having said that, Theodore paused for a moment before advising, "You should cut back on the alcohol. Being drunk can get you in trouble. Don't you know that?"

"Alright dad, I understand. You should go rest up! I'm going to bed!" Ivan replied impatiently before going off.

The next day, Selena went to work early in the morning.

However, just as she parked and got out of her car outside her office, she felt a knock on her head. Her vision blurred and then passed out. The woman before her smiled dryly, then placed Selena in the co-driver seat before driving away. They quickly left the town and arrived at a dilapidated house atop a mountain not far from the city.

After a while, Selena finally regained consciousness. She opened her eyes and felt her head spin. She took a careful look at the woman in front of her and could not help shaking her head. That was because she saw herself.

"What's going on? I-I-I can't be dead, right? Is this my soul?" Selena was flabbergasted. She saw herself looking at her, smiling with her hands crossed before her chest. The smile seemed rather evil.

However, she soon realized that she was tied to a wooden pillar.

"That's not it. I'm not dead. Who are you?" Selena's heart skipped a beat. The pain of being tightly bound by ropes on her arm was too real. She was not dreaming, nor did she die. That must be the case.

Chapter 379

The woman replied, "Well... You're pretty and kind. But it doesn't change the fact that I have been hired to kill and I must complete my mission."

“Hire? You’re a hitman! Where is this place?” Selena was shocked and scared at the same time. This run-down house they were in looked really old. That aside, she ran into a hitman. Who on earth hired a hitman and wanted her dead?”

“Ivan?” She quickly thought of him as Ivan was a revengeful man, and Jack broke his bone. This alone would make him a highly possible candidate.

Selena then dismissed the idea as quickly as she thought. ‘Impossible. Ivan has been longing to secure the contract. Even if he really wanted me dead, he would do it after the contract, not before.’

“Don’t worry, you’re not my instructed target,” the woman spoke.

“I’m not your target, so why did you capture me?” Selena suddenly understood. “Now I know, you’re disguised as me... Your target is my husband, Jack!”

Selena gasped as it might very well be true. If she wanted Selena dead, she would have done so much earlier. The fact that she captured Selena was to attract her actual target who was none other than Jack. Selena thought of the possibility of someone revenging on Jack would be much higher as he had caused trouble to a lot of people out there.

Jack did not only get in the way of Ivan but people like Ken, Neil and Michael as well. All these were no ordinary people. If they wanted Jack dead, it would just be a piece of cake.

“Smart!” The woman nodded. “So, your husband will be dead today. You can’t blame me but you can blame my employer.”

“Who’s your employer?” Selena tried to interrogate.

“this is funny. Do you think a professional hitman like myself, being the top five in the southwest region, will reveal this information to you? I, on the other hand, was wondering how easy it is to lure your

husband here using your face.”

“Shameless!” Selena scolded, “My husband is a veteran and has served the military for five years. He can fight a dozen alone! I’m warning you, you better let me go and abort this mission, you may lose your life to this mission!”

“I see you’re trying to threaten me here. Five years of the military? He’s a piece of cake to me, even if I don’t disguise myself as you. Let me tell you, even marshals won’t be my match.”

“A marshal will not be your match...?” Selena’s mouth twitched at her abilities. She initially wanted to scare the hitman but did not think that the hitman was actually that skillful. She started to actually worry about Jack now.

Chapter 380

Although she was a hitman, Selena was reassured that Jack was pretty skilled himself too. So, she was somewhat confident in Jack. Jack might be the person who kills the hitman instead of the other way round. However, Shadow’s words had concerned her. She was very skillful if she could beat a marshal. If that was the case, Jack would be in big trouble. On top of that, the hitman had disguised herself as Selena. What if Jack fell for that? Big trouble... It was easy to kill Jack if he was not alert enough. As though a fight between one who had normal vision and a blind person, the blind would naturally be at disadvantage.

“Are you scared now? Are you worried now?” Shadow toyed a dagger and tapped it on Selena’s face. “Do you know why I love disguising as my target’s partner? I like to see the look on their face when they die, that look of disbelief!”

With that, Shadow turned around and laughed. “Until the moment they die, they would still think that it was their partner who killed them. I’ll never explain myself and I’ll never tell them why. They shall die confused.”

“You’re mad! Karma will get to you!” Selena’s eyes reddened as she stared at Shadow with hatred.

“to reassure you, I’ll leave you here as you watch me finish your man outside. Yell with all your might but you won’t be able to. You’ll live in misery forever after he dies. I’d love to see that! Personally, I think killing is a ritual to practice. And all these are part of the ritual!” Malice filled Shadow’s eyes, life was as unimportant as an ant.

“I dare you to not disguise as me to fight my husband! For you to disguise as me is just a dirty trick because you’re no match for him!” Selena growled.

She was truly worried for Jack. What would happen to her and Kylie if he dies? They had only recently reunited and were living a better life. To watch Jack die in front of her was the last thing she would ever wish for.

“You’re trying to provoke me, aren’t you? Will he stand a better chance like that? Just very slightly, I guess. Heh, you’re not just an empty vase, after all, you’ve got brains!” Shadow smirked then continued, “Speaking of which, I really like your face. It’s perfect. It looks kind and approachable. I love it! How about this, I’ll use your face for my missions next time. Let’s see how many people can take it when this ‘face’ kills. Any family members who witnessed the murder would recognize you as the murderer. Will they come after you? I wonder...”

“You...” Selena almost fainted out of anger, but she still tried. “I dare you to not make up! You’re an ugly fag, aren’t you? You’re so ugly you wouldn’t go out without a mask!”

Shadow was impatient at this point. “Quit it, I didn’t, do you understand? How can make up do such a job? This is Transfiguration. Do you know Transfiguration? Uncultured b*tch!” No.1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 381-385

Chapter 381

Selena was helpless. She tried to persuade further but Shadow had stuffed a towel in her mouth. “Look, see that slit? I’ll leave it open just very slightly, enough for you to see the table outside from here. I’ll bring your husband to that table and kill him there. You just watch.”

“Ughh!” Selena could not be more nervous. She shook her head hard and tried to say something—she could not.

“stop it. You just wait here and watch the show.” Shadow smirked as she retrieved Selena’s phone to call Jack.

Selena had a sudden realization—even if Shadow looked like her, Shadow could never sound like her. Jack was not stupid, he would have seen through the deception sooner than later! What proceeded had caught Selena in shock. The moment the call went through, Shadow’s voice changed. She sounded just like Selena! Even Selena thought so. It was impossible for Jack to tell them apart, impossible... What made it worse was that Shadow was wearing her clothes. It seemed like Shadow had her eyes on Selena a long time prior to this. She even planned and bought the same clothes as Selena. The amount of planning poured into this was scary.

“Hi, honey. I’m waiting for you outside the city, can you come over? I want to bring you somewhere fun and we’ll have a chat there. What do you say?” Her voice was so slutty it gave Selena goosebumps.

“Sure! Is this a date? Wait for me, honey. I’m driving to you!” Shadow put the call on speaker to let Selena hear.

“Alright, see you!” Shadow hung up the call and smirked at Selena. “Bye, my pretty lady. I’m going to get your husband. You just wait here and should be able to see me holding his hands in ten minutes. Worry not, I’ll play with him for a little before making my move. That’s because...men have their guard up the least when they kiss!”

Finally, Shadow left Selena, leaving just enough gap for her to see the table outside the room.

Selena could only growl in her heart. She was hoping Jack could tell that something was wrong from the call and not come at all. Who would have known Jack just agreed to the meet up without a single hesitation, he even sounded a little excited.

'Dumb Jack... Too lovesick, are you? Don't you know I'm a workaholic, why on earth would I ask you out during work?' She could only vocalize this in her mind.

Chapter 382

The hilltop was not far away from the city. Soon, Shadow arrived at the suburb area in Selena's car. She pulled over, leaned on the car while waiting for Jack to arrive. As expected, Jack arrived in his car within the next five minutes.

"What's up, honey? You have the time to sneak out of the office today?" Jack pulled over and smiled at the woman.

"I just thought we could have some fun! Although it's a little run-down, that place is serene and has a good view." Shadow smiled and entered her car. "Stay in your car and follow me."

"Alright!" Jack did as told.

There was an uneasy feeling. Jack had been suspicious if this 'Selena' was the Selena he knew. It was something about her slutty eyes that gave it away. The real Selena did not have these eyes. These were sultry and seductive eyes.

"That's funny, why would she bring me out today?" Jack questioned as he drove.

The drive did not seem long before they arrived at the hilltop, and proceeded to park their car on an empty piece of land.

"How's this place, not bad aye? Look, you can see the whole of Eastfield from here. There's even a breeze, isn't it amazing?!" Her figure was clearly accented when she stretched her back. Jack, on the other hand, was dazed. She was beautiful!

“Honey, look! There’s a house, let’s check it out,” she suggested.

“Sure!” Jack nodded.

At this point, ‘Selena’ walked toward Jack and unexpectedly held his hand. Jack looked at her, feeling a little shy.

“What’s the matter, honey? You look weird. We’re a couple, it’s only normal for us to hold hands.” ‘Selena’ was suddenly very romantic. She even cheekily rolled her eyes at Jack.

“No, nothing!” Jack was quite certain something was wrong, yet he just smiled and followed.

“Looks like it’s been some time since anyone stayed here. There’s a lot of spider web!” Shadow smiled and tucked Jack’s hands. She directed Jack to the table and pretended to look out of the window.

Jack then noticed a door. “Hey, there’s a door there. Let’s check it out.”

The real Selena who was tied up in the room was worried sick. She tried to shout, hoping to get Jack’s attention, and even struggled to free herself. However, she was tied up too tightly with a cloth stuffed in her mouth. Her effort to warn Jack was to no avail. Hence, she was delighted the moment she heard that Jack noticed the door. Well, Shadow would not have let the rescue happen, of course.

Chapter 383

Shadow quickly pulled Jack to her and bit her sexy red lips. “Honey, about that... It’s been so long since you started serving the military... And, there’s no one else here...” she said as she tapped her fingers on Jack’s chest, trying to seduce him.

“Selena... Let’s not...under broad daylight?” Jack frowned and looked outside.

"I've closed the door after we enter. Besides, this is in the middle of nowhere, no one would come here! I think we can be a little more open here... It sets the mood well." She tipped her toes and kissed Jack on his neck as she proceeded.

Looking at the 'Selena' in front of him, there was more reason for him to suspect.

He quick-wittedly hugged her. "Look at you... Who knew that you like to set the mood like this. What dominatrix you are!"

"Quit mocking me, I just want to have some fun." Shadow was secretly joyous at the fact that men were such simple-minded animals. Any trivial sexual advancement could send them to trap.

"Alright!"

On the other hand, the real Selena in the room was worried sick looking at how Jack had hugged the woman. Again, she tried to vocalize her warning, and again, she failed. It was only natural that she was this worried. That woman looked exactly like herself, Jack had no reason to have his guard up against her. Furthermore, her seduction skills... Jack, a young lad in his early twenties, would have already lost his mind by then. How could he possibly resist?

What proceeded was that Shadow locked Jack's lip with hers, and they started their business. Jack hugged her real tight. Selena saw Shadow reaching for something under her dress. Soon after, Shadow retrieved a dagger from her stockings at her thigh. Staring at the dagger, Selena's heart dropped. Just as she was about to stab Jack, he swiftly turned around and got out of Selena's sight. It was a blind spot for Selena and she could not see much from the door slit.

Shadow frowned. She struggled to stab Jack with the dagger as her hand was clamped by another strong hand. She gasped and prepared for another strike. Unfortunately, Jack was too fast, and had already grabbed hold of the dagger with his other hand and stabbed it in Shadow's chest.

“Ahhhhh...” Shadow looked at her chest, eyes filled with disbelief. She underestimated the speed and strength of her opponent. Furthermore, the dagger stabbed right at her heart, she had no chance of retaliation.

Shadow’s scream sent chills down Selena’s spine. Her heart was heavy. What had the woman done to Jack? Would Jack really fall into her trap?

“Wh...why...?” Shadow was weak. At her last breath, she still did not understand what gave her identity away. “Don’t all men like their wife seductive?”

Jack grabbed her face and pulled her mask down, revealing her true face. He proceeded by whispering in her ears, “Shadow, learned Transfiguration, twenty-five this year, is a hitman since twenty.”

“Who... Who are you?” That was Shadow’s last breath. She died with eyes filled with shock. Her identity had always been well-kept, how could this man know so much about her?

Chapter 384

Selena struggled. She tried to warn Jack but her effort was in vain. Soon after, she realized that no more noise was coming from outside. It was pin-drop silence. ‘Is Jack...dead?’ she started to worry. Suddenly, she was frightened by the sight of a hand appearing at the door that swiftly pushed the door open.

Selena’s eye reddened and teared from joy seeing that it was Jack who entered. She just realized how much she cared for him at that moment of life and death. Not just that she realized how much she loved him, she was also dreaded by the thought of his death that would leave her child without a father. Seeing that Jack entered the room safely, she breathed a sigh of relief.

“I knew that woman was not you!” Panic-stricken, he made his way to Selena and removed the cloth stuffed in her mouth. He quickly held her in his embrace and asked, “Honey, how’re you? Did she beat you? Did she torture you?”

“No, I’m fine. You’re the target, not me. Where is she? She is a hitman. Top five in the southwest region,

she said... She's dangerous! Even marshals are no match for her," Selena explained hurriedly.

Before she could finish speaking, Jack looked at her, cupped her cheeks in his hands, and pecked hard on her lips. Selena, who was still tied to the pillar, did not see that coming. Embarrassed, she found herself palpitating with her pupils widely dilated.

After that peck, Jack continued, "I was worried for you when I found out that she was a hitman! I didn't want anything to happen to you!"

Only after this, he started to untie Selena.

"You... Cheeky! How dare you kiss me?" Selena blushed as she rolled her eyes at Jack. "Pervert! You kissed me before you even untie me!"

"Can't help it, I was too indulged in the mood! I was worried for you, okay? So, honey. I got the sequence wrong... Does that mean that I should kiss you after I untie you?" Jack awkwardly smiled.

"You... Don't kiss me without my permission next time!" Selena stuttered.

She left her words at that and ran out to find the hitman lying on the floor in a pool of blood.

Seeing how the hitman was as dead as a doornail, she finally sighed with relief, "She's a skilled hitman, not even a marshal is a match for her! How did you kill her...without defense?"

Jack snickered and explained, "I've had my suspicions. First of all, it was your office hour. Before you left for work you told me you'll be going on field to sign a contract. Why would you ask me to hang out here? Second of all, I noticed the tire trails on this hill road. This is a road less traveled and there is little traffic around. So the tire trails meant that someone had driven up before me."

Jack paused for a while before he continued, "Well, third of all... That woman had slutty eyes. My wife won't ask me out. She doesn't have slutty eyes, and most of all she won't seduce me!"

"I was worried sick in there, worried that you'll fall into her trap and get killed. Who knew you were observant enough to see that through, you should go and be a detective!" Selena was dumbfounded. It seemed she was worried for nothing. Jack had caught on to the suspicious clues.

Chapter 385

Only then Jack confessed, "Even with those considered, I was hesitant to make the move to kill. What if I was wrong? I could only make the move when she was exposed."

"What exposed her?" Selena frowned and doubted as she thought the hitman's disguise was perfect.

"And that is, the fact that my wife won't take the lead to kiss me. More importantly, I smelled cigarettes. That meant she smokes. My wife never smokes! That was when I confirmed my judgment, that the woman was a hitman and not you."

"Pretty smart, aren't you?" Then she thought about how that woman had kissed Jack. Irritated, she mocked, "So, what now? Were you excited that she made the move to kiss you? She has a nice body, I must say. Happy now?"

Jack was ashamed. So, Selena was jealous after all.

Bitterly, he smiled. "Honey, that was a hitman I was dealing with. Do you think I had the time to even think of those? It was dragged out a little because I was worried that I misjudged her. So I delayed my move to kill her and only did so after I'm certain of it."

"Wait a second, she was a skilled hitman! How did you settle her so fast? I saw that she had a dagger!" Selena found herself confused. If Jack was a lot more skilled than that woman, that would mean that he was a king of war!

Jack awkwardly smiled and replied, "Maybe because her guard wasn't up. She wouldn't have thought that I'd see through her deception so she was more lax. With that, it was easy to kill her."

"Right, right! That's what she said. It's a piece of cake to kill someone with no guard up. Bet she didn't think you outsmarted her!"

"Selena, did you tear when you see me just now? You were worried about me?" Jack finally laughed.

Selena's face reddened again after trying so hard to recollect herself. She rolled her eyes and said, "In your dreams! I wasn't worried about you. I was worried about myself. What if she kills me? I was worried about Kylie and I teared because of Kylie, okay?"

She knew she was lying. Immediately, she shifted the attention to the dead body on the floor and diverted the topic. "So how do we settle this? We can't just leave her here."

"Such a run-down house... Let's burn this whole place!" Jack replied after giving it some thought.

What followed was that they both made a fire outside the house.

Watching as the fire burns, Selena suddenly thought of this. "Sh*t, we would've searched her body in case she has a phone. From there we could see her contacts, and find out who was behind this!"

"don't worry about that. There are more people who want me dead!" He shifted his gaze to Selena and gave her a very serious look. "Looks like I'll need to get you a bodyguard. I'm not worried about myself. What if they target you to get to me? I can't watch you all day, I have work at Drake's."

"It can't be Ivan... I'm about to sign a contract with them..." Selena seemed to be still distracted by the fact that she did not retrieve the hitman's phone. She looked at the time and exclaimed, "Sh*t! It's past

eleven!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 386-390

Chapter 386

"it's fine as there's no hurry. Let them come over tomorrow!" Jack smiled and looked beside him where Selena was, "Honey, since you're also here, let's go to the city and have lunch to steady our nerves. What do you think?"

"Sounds good." Selena nodded and they soon drove down from the hill.

At this moment, Ivan Taylor and Janet were still waiting inside of Selena's office.

"What's going on? This is..." Ivan started to get impatient. He had already made at least ten calls to Selena previously but none of them were picked up by her.

He looked at Janet and said, "Do you think that we've been played? This woman must be making fun of us. If that's the case, she's too much!"

Janet on the other hand, smiled. "Impossible, I trust Manager Taylor. Since she promised us, she would be here. She must have been delayed by an emergency matter!"

"that's so funny. What's more important than signing a contract with us?" Ivan laughed and said out of anger.

After that, he frowned and took in a breath. After all, the assassin told them to settle the issue within five days. Today was considered the second day. Was it possible that they have already made a move? The most important part was, this Shadow had her own special hobby when she carried out her mission. Such as, she not only liked to pretend as the target's closest person, she also liked to let the closest person look on as she killed that target.

“Was it possible...” Ivan thought about it. It was already so late and Selena had not appeared yet. She might have been kidnapped by the Shadow and he was speechless inwardly.

“I...” He stood up in a sudden and held his hands into fists. He felt angry and regretful inwardly.

He was too careless. He did not care much about Selena’s life and it did not matter if she really died. However, he had not signed the contract yet. After all, this contract could bring around five to six billion for the Taylor family. This was only a conservative estimation, if their operations were better, it would be more than this.

If the Shadow had already taken action and killed Selena, they would have suffered a big loss. If this position was taken over by another person, would the signing of the contract they have not signed continue? That may not be the case. After all, they successfully got this opportunity because of their relationship with Selena.

“What’s going on? Young Master Taylor, why are you startled?” Janet frowned as she looked at Ivan, who stood up.

“It’s nothing. I think that we’re out of hope today as it’s already so late. Let’s go back first and come again tomorrow morning!” Ivan walked out with a darkened face.

“Okay, let’s come and have a look tomorrow morning!” Janet also felt that it was a waste of time. She sighed, took the prepared contract and left.

Ivan walked out the entrance and to his car. He thought about it before calling the Shadow. Unfortunately, none of his two calls could get through.

Chapter 387

”Sh*t, sh*t. There’s a possibility that Selena had been kidnapped. I have no idea if the assassin would kill

her!” Ivan was so angry that he held his hands into fists. “I’m really careless. I haven’t signed the contract yet, I should’ve asked her to wait for a few days before doing anything. This...”

Ivan had no idea that asking this person to kill Jack would cause his contract signing matter to fail. As he sat in the car, his mind was filled with thoughts about visiting the place where Selena and the others stayed that night. However, he thought about it and dismissed this thinking. If Jack and Selena were fine and the assassin had not started her action, his proactive action of visiting them cannot be justified. After all, he had shown his disgust previously and had never visited them. If the assassin failed, Jack might be doubtful that he was the one who employed the assassin? Although, the possibility of the assassin failing was very small.

He thought about it, looked at the time and was prepared to drive back. Coincidentally, when he passed by a cafe, he looked inside and actually saw Xena Jackson.

“Isn’t that Ben Taylor’s girlfriend?” Ivan was slightly stunned. He parked the car by the road, got down and entered the cafe.

At this moment, Xena was having a chat with two of her best friends and seemed to be in a very good mood.

“Miss Jackson, I had no idea that I would run into you here!” Ivan said with a smile and walked over.

“Young Master Taylor!” Xena was stunned and said with a smile, “That’s a real coincidence. These are my best friends, we are having a cup of coffee because we’re tired from shopping!”

“Really?” Ivan purposely took a look at the time before sitting down by the side and said with a smile, “It just so happens that I have something to speak with Miss Jackson. Do I have the opportunity to invite you to lunch?! If your best friends are in the mood, they can join us too!”

Those girls glanced at each other with a mutual understanding and stood up, “Young Master Taylor, we’ll get out of your hair. Enjoy your talk and allow us to make a move first!”

“Okay, let me treat you guys in the future when there’s an opportunity!” Ivan stood up and spoke politely, like a gentleman.

“Does Young Master Taylor want a cup of coffee? Let me pay for that. Since you treat me to lunch, I’ll treat you to coffee!” Xena smiled indifferently and said.

“There’s no need for that. Let’s sit here while you finish your cup of coffee. Later, let’s find a hotel, get a private room and I’ll treat you to dinner!” Ivan replied with an indifferent smile. According to his experience with many girls, Xena was definitely a gold digger.

Apart from that, he previously saw Xena hug a young guy who looked like a second generation of a rich family by accident. He was just too lazy to tell Ben about this. However, when he passed by from outside, he suddenly had an idea.

“Really? Just the two of us? We’ll go to a hotel and get a private room for food? Wouldn’t that be a waste? Let’s just eat some simple food!” Xena was surprised. Seating in front of her was the young master of the Taylor family, Ivan Taylor. This man had the highest possibility of inheriting the Taylor family in the future so he could be considered as a real rich family’s next generation. At least, when compared to Ben, Ivan was at least 100 times better than him.

During the previous hotel gathering, Ben took her with him. In the midst of it, she really wanted to have a drink with Ivan and get a name card after that. It was a pity when he ignored her and left her in an embarrassing situation. She had no idea that Ivan would proactively ask her out for a meal and she wondered what was his hidden agenda.

Chapter 388

Ivan looked at her and smiled indifferently. “How would it be a waste to have lunch with such a pretty lady? It should be my honor!”

Xena smiled when she heard this. “Young Master Taylor, I’m sure you’ve seen a lot of pretty ladies. I

shouldn't be considered as a pretty lady in your opinion!"

"you're being very modest!" Ivan stood up and gestured after you to Xena, "Let's go!"

"I think you've left me with no choice but to accept deferentially!" Although Xena was still curious about why Ivan wanted to invite her for dinner alone, she felt that he must have something important to talk about. Hence, she did not think much and just followed him.

The two of them drove and soon arrived at a high-end hotel. They got a private room and ordered quite some dishes.

"Young Master Taylor, is there anything important that you need to seek me out privately?" Xena seemed a little nervous as this was her first time sitting face to face with a real rich person. Apart from that, it was so grand as they even got red wine and she was unprepared for it. After all, Ivan had on a suit that exudes the feeling of a successful person.

"Come, let's first drink!" Ivan poured a glass of wine for her and clanked the glasses together.

"Sure!" Xena had no idea what Ivan had in mind but she still drank all the red wine in a gulp.

"I like girls that are pretty and straight-forward like you!" Ivan laughed. He then casually placed a hand on Xena's thigh as if it was an accident after he spoke.

"Young Master Taylor, what are you..." Xena blushed and immediately removed his hand.

"Oh!" Ivan realized what happened and said with a smile, "Miss Xena, you're too pretty and I can't help myself!"

Ivan paused here before continuing, "It's just a waste that you're with an untalented man. You're really

making it easy for Ben. What can that guy do? He doesn't have a job and only plays video games. How is he worthy of a beauty like you?"

Xena was secretly happy when she heard this. She was so lucky, was it possible that Ivan had really set his eyes on her? If that was the case, it was very good if she got to be with Young Master Taylor and was able to marry him.

The current Taylor family was close to being a second-class aristocratic family. She heard that Selena's company was about to sign a contract with the Taylor family. It was a huge project and once they succeed, the Taylor family would definitely make it into the range of second-class aristocratic families within one or two years. Wouldn't she be changing her status to a higher one if she was married to a second-class aristocratic family's future master? Apart from that, although Ivan constantly visited bars and there were bad rumors about him, but, which rich man was not a womanizer?

Chapter 389

"Oh, Young Master Taylor, what you've said is too much. I'm not that pretty!" Xena pretended to be modest and picked up some food before putting it on Ivan's plate. "Come, let's eat!"

"sure!" Ivan laughed and they started eating.

After a while, Ivan said again, "Miss Xena, I've fallen in love with you at first sight. I've been thinking about you for the past few days and I'm so lucky to have bumped into you today. I had to muster my courage to invite you for dinner!"

"How's that possible?" Xena frowned and looked at Ivan before saying, "Young Master Taylor, are you being serious?"

"Don't you worry, I am!" Taylor placed one of his hands on Xena's thigh again before saying with a smile, "From today onwards, I'll give you whatever you want. You would also give me everything I want, right? I believe that you don't really like Ben, right?"

“Young Master Taylor, you’re right. I’ve fallen out of love for Ben since long ago. If he wasn’t so nice to me, I really want to break up with him!”

Xena was afraid that she would miss this opportunity. She stopped pushing Ivan’s hand away, pretending as if nothing happened.

Ivan had a cold smile inwardly when he heard this. However, he directly held her hand, “Xena, be my woman. I have no idea if it’s because of the wine today. I haven’t had much but I feel drunk. I want you. How about this, why don’t you accompany me to rest in a room upstairs and later, I’ll bring you out to buy some branded handbags and clothes. You can choose whatever you have your eyes on. What do you say?”

Xena immediately pretended to be reserved and said, “This-this doesn’t sound like a good idea, Young Master Taylor. Although I don’t like Ben, we haven’t broken up. Apart from that, who knows but you might be lying to me. I’ve just known you for a while and although I have some feelings for you, but, it doesn’t sound so good to go into a hotel room, right?”

“Hey, what’s so bad about it? You must have misunderstood me?” Ivan immediately said with a smile, “It’s best that you have feelings for me. I’m asking you to follow me because I would like for you to accompany me while I rest and have a chat with me. I’m not asking you to do anything, right? Don’t you worry, I’m not that kind of person!”

“I guess it would be fine if it’s only sitting down and resting!” Xena blushed and was shy. She clearly knew that if she really followed him upstairs, it wouldn’t be as simple as taking a rest.

After they finished eating, they quickly got a room and walked into the room.

“Xena, I really want to be with you, but, you cannot break up with Ben yet. You have to remain with him so that we can get information about Selena and Jack! Don’t you worry. As long as you help me with this and tell me what I want to know, you will surely benefit from it!” Ivan said to Xena, who was in front of him, after he closed the door.

“I thought that you really liked me. In the end, you are only taking advantage of me. You want to stabilize your position in the Taylor family and get rid of your threat, Selena, right?” Xena laughed and she finally realized that Ivan wanted to use her for something.

“How can you call this taking advantage of you? From today onwards, you will be my girlfriend, my woman. Isn’t it normal for my woman to do something for me?” Ivan smiled and actually pulled Xena over to him before pouncing on her as they landed on the bed.

“Let go of me!” Xena was startled and started struggling.

Chapter 390

“Young Master Taylor, no! We can’t...” Xena was really startled and she fought back.

“Xena, you’ll be my woman. You’ll be following me on a journey to enjoy life from today onwards. Apart from that, I can buy everything you like!”

Ivan had some wine. That and the fact that Xena was pretty with a great body, he seemed unable to control himself, turning crazy under the drive of alcohol.

“No-no...We can’t! We’ve just met not long ago.”

“Relationships happen because of feelings for each other and have nothing to do with the amount of time we’ve met...”

“Young master Taylor, no! I’m not prepared for this!”

“...” Xena was secretly happy about this and she gave in to him after refusing half-heartedly.

Around half an hour later, Ivan looked at the woman on the bed in satisfaction. He put on his clothes, "Honey, you're really good. Let's go on a shopping trip together and I'll buy you a car. How about that?"

"Buy a car?" Xena was dazed before she asked, "Young master Taylor, you're really good at telling jokes. Didn't I come over driving a Rolls-Royce Phantom?"

"That's not a rental?" Ivan was stunned. Xena was a vain woman and in his opinion, she must have rented that Rolls-Royce Phantom to support her vanity and to show-off in front of her best friends.

Different from what he imagined, Xena said with a smile, "Young Master Taylor, you must be joking. Why would I rent such a nice car? I guess that this car can be considered as mine!"

"Can be considered as yours? What does that mean?" Ivan wondered.

"Oh, I'm sure that you don't know this yet. Jack knows how to practice medicine and he was able to help Miss George lose weight with the medicinal knowledge he acquired from some unknown place! It all started when Sharon George fell for Jack and under the encouragement of her friends, she came over to confess to him..." Xena soon told everything that happened yesterday to Ivan.

She continued with, "Fiona doesn't know how to drive yet, so I can drive this car whenever I want. Even if she gets her license later, I can still drive Ben's car, right? After all, everything that's his, is mine, right? Aren't we considered as a family?"

Ivan pulled Xena over, signed her waist and said with a cold expression, "What's this nonsense about you being in the same family as them? You're my woman now, not his family. If not, I'll get jealous!"

Although Xena knew what Ivan said might be lies, she still felt warm inwardly.

She could not help but rolled her eyes at Ivan, "Alright, Young Master Taylor, I get it, okay? Until today, I haven't let that stupid guy, Ben, touch me yet. He's just a spare tire to me! How can he compare with a

strong and handsome man like Young Master Taylor?”

“Hey girl, stop calling me Young Master Taylor. You can address me as Ivan when there’s only us, but do remember to address me as Young Master Taylor when there are outsiders, alright?” Ivan thought about it and immediately continued, “Apart from that, you have to tell me on time about everything that happens in Ben’s family. As an example, the matter of Jack treating Sharon George is not a small one.”

“Okay!” Xena thought about it and said after she remembered something, “Oh yes, Master George originally thought that the medication that Jack gave was fake so he stepped on it. In the end, they lacked one of the pills and Jack asked for twenty million. The George family had enough money that they directly paid him to buy that one pill!”

“What?!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 391-395

Chapter 391

The corners of Ivan’s mouth twitched when he heard this. If Jack really had money, it would be difficult for him to make a joke out of Jack on the old man’s birthday and throw him out of the house.

“However, he gave the twenty million to Fiona as the betrothal gift for Selena, fulfilling his previous promise to Fiona!” Xena continued.

“Alright. If Jack manages to get any money in the future, even if it’s something normal like the Drake family paid his wages earlier than scheduled, you have to immediately inform me about it. It doesn’t matter if you don’t know anything, but if you do, you must inform me!” Ivan thought about it and reminded Xena.

“Alright. Young Master Taylor, I get it!” Xena rolled her eyes at him impatiently. She was slightly unhappy as after their entire encounter, she had become a spy and was in charge of uncovering information?

“I have already told you to not address me as Young Master Taylor, call me Ivan!” Ivan smiled and wrapped his hand around her shoulder, “Let’s go shopping, I’ll buy you expensive bags and watches. How about that?”

“Okay, but we have to go to the north side of the city. If we stay here, we might bump into Ben and won’t we be discovered?” Xena thought about it and said.

“Yes, darling. You’re the smart one! It seems that I cannot hug you in public too!” Ivan smiled. He believed that with the help of Xena, who was by Jack and the others’ sides, he would get information about everything in their lives from that day onwards.

After shopping for two to three hours, Ivan drove back to the Taylor Mansion alone. He was stunned when he entered the living hall because the old master and some of the Taylor family’s members were waiting for him here.

“How was it? Ivan, did you sign the contract?” Theodore Taylor immediately asked.

Obviously, everybody was waiting for him here with this thought in their mind. They were waiting for him to come back and give him some good news, but he only returned at this moment.

Only now did Ivan remember the matter that made him angry that morning. He could only smile embarrassingly, “Sigh, don’t mention it! We didn’t manage to sign the contract. I had no idea what happened but Selena didn’t come to work this morning so I left. She didn’t pick up my calls and I plan to go over again tomorrow!”

“who was the one that promised us he would definitely get the contract signed today? If not, didn’t he say that he’ll go live on social media to show himself eating shit?” A forty-year-old man couldn’t help but laugh with a taunt on his face.

The corners of Ivan’s mouth immediately twitched. This was his elder and used to work hard under Selena’s management. He was very hard working and was very supportive of Selena. However, after he

became the general manager, these people were disobedient towards him. If they weren't his elders, he would have found a reason to fire them.

"How's that possible? Young Master Ivan actually said that he'll go live and show himself eating shit?"

"Do you want to try it? You might be able to go viral!" Cecilia Taylor stood beside them and was laughing. She was not here yesterday and only knew about Ivan's promise at that moment.

Chapter 392

Ivan was pissed. He would not have thought that Cecilia would tease him without any respect given. What a brat!

"Can't you take a joke?" He glared at her.

"Is it? You're the young Master of the Taylor family. Such a prestigious identity... How could you joke about such a thing? I humbly advise you to not make such a joke next time," Cecilia mocked.

She was dating a young master from a second-class aristocratic family. Soon, she could marry him and be a rich madam. By then, Ivan would be a piece of cake, and she would not have to work under him anymore. She was euphoric at the thought of this. Ivan, on the other hand, wanted to punch Cecilia!

Suddenly, Old Master spoke, "I say, you guys watch your mouth before we secure the contract." He paused for a bit before continuing, "Selena is someone who'll honor her words. She won't just chicken out. There must be a valid reason why she didn't make it."

Speaking of the devil, Ivan's phone rang. It was Selena.

"Selena Taylor, what is the meaning of this? I've waited for you the whole afternoon. Where were you? You didn't answer a single phone call!"

Ivan knew exactly what happened, all this rage was just for show. He had turned on the speaker so everyone could hear Selena explain. He was betting if Selena was calling him to interrogate if he hired the hitman to kill Jack. Even better, perhaps Jack was already dead. Could Shadow have only killed her target, Jack, and not Selena?

'So, Selena, are you going to ask me if I've hired a hitman or what?' Ivan thought.

What proceeded was... "I ran into a hitman this morning. She kidnapped me so I wasn't able to answer nor return your calls..."

"Oh my god, kidnapped?!"

"No way... Who is that?! We're considerably respectable being a third-class aristocratic family, I bet no ordinary people would do such a thing to us."

"Hitman? How could she still be alive after being kidnapped? Are you sure they're not asking for money?"

Those in Taylor's mansion gasped and were shocked by the news.

Old Master Taylor waited no more before he snatched the phone. "How are you, Selena? Are you hurt?"

On the other end of the call, Selena felt warm as she could feel the concern from the tone of Old Master's voice. "I'm fine, Grandpa, don't worry. That hitman's target is Jack. She knows Transfiguration and she had disguised herself as me! But Jack could see it through, he didn't fall for her tricks and even killed her! I was surprised!" Selena summarized her experience and explained.

"That's good, that's good!" The old master broke out in cold sweat. The fact that she was a hitman was

bad enough, what was worse was that she knew Transfiguration! Well, who would have suspected the person they least suspected to be?

Chapter 393

“Alright now, Grandpa, I’m hanging up. Get Ivan to come sign the contract tomorrow morning.”

“Jack is pretty smart, isn’t he? He saw through her deception, played along, and then retaliated!” Cecilia could not help but compliment.

“Thank goodness they are both fine. If Jack was dead, Kylie would be without a father!” Eugene Taylor, who was in his forties, lamented.

“So what if he dies, he’s just an outsider. He’s just a bodyguard, a rough man! My cousin Selena is such an excellent woman, she will get another man,” Ivan, on the other hand, dissed. He was still salty about the money spent—fifty million—on hiring such an elite hitman like Shadow, but got killed by Jack instead!

The mission was not completed, and on top of that, there would be no refund because the hitman was dead! That fifty million was burned overnight, just like that. They paid fifty million...just to see the enemy still alive.

“Ivan, watch your mouth. A stepdad will never treat his stepdaughter as well as one’s own father would. Besides, Jack has got a stable job with Drake’s now. Who’s to say he won’t succeed in the future? Jack, this young lad, I think he’s got potential. He’s smart, has a high income, and he can fight well! He’s the perfect match for Selena!” Eugene defended Jack.

Eugene hoped that Selena could come back to Taylor’s and work for them. He also hoped Jack could be acknowledged by the family so that the whole family could live peacefully under one roof.

“he’s just a soldier, a bodyguard. He’s no match to all the young masters out there!” Ivan was still obviously salty and continued to pick fights.

“Alright there, your uncle, Eugene, has a point. Jack is a bodyguard but he isn’t just any ordinary bodyguard. He’s a bodyguard at Drake’s. He has the potential to grow there.” Zeus could not take it anymore and interjected Ivan, “Ivan, you can’t penalize him just because of that conflict that happened. Besides, he has promised to compensate you with ten million on my birthday. If he kept his words, you should let this go. Understood?”

“Yes, Grandpa, I understand.” Ivan was still upset, and only said this to pacify his grandfather.

He quickly followed up with, “But if he can’t fulfill his promise, and didn’t get you an expensive gift, he’ll have to divorce Selena and leave the Taylor family according to the contract. Right?”

“Naturally. He suggested this condition, and he shall be a man to his words.” The old man nodded. Honesty was a virtue he upheld, Jack was no good for his granddaughter if he could not keep his words.

...

“What? What have I heard? You said you were kidnapped?” Selena, who was answering a call in her yard, was interjected by Fiona who was eavesdropping behind her. She got a bad feeling about this...

Chapter 394

Selena did not tell Fiona about what happened that day—the kidnap and the hitman—to save Fiona some worries. Hence, she secretly took her call out to her yard after dinner. Unexpectedly, Fiona had actually followed her out to the yard and heard everything she said on the call.

“Mum, it’s nothing. Aren’t we home safe and sound now?” Selena awkwardly smiled. She did not look well, though.

Filled with anger, Fiona reprimanded, “Back? Do you have any idea how dangerous that was? That damn Jack... If it wasn’t for him causing troubles, would anyone hire a hitman to kill him?” She then turned toward the house and yelled, “Jack, you bastard! Get out here this instance!”

“Mum, what’s the matter?” Jack asked with a smile as he paced toward them.

“What’s the matter? Heh... I heard you ran into a hitman today, she even kidnapped and disguised as my daughter? You have no idea what you got yourself into? That’s a killer you were dealing with, what if she killed my daughter? This is all your fault. You’ve been going around causing troubles! My daughter wouldn’t have to deal with this if it wasn’t for you!”

Fiona blasted at the sight of Jack. She continued, “Hmph, don’t think that twenty million you gave me can buy your way out of this. I’m warning you, don’t let this happen again. Even though I take you as my son-in-law now, I’ll make my daughter divorce you if it ever happens again!”

Embarrassed, Jack smiled bitterly as he replied, “Mum, no one could have seen that coming. I wouldn’t know the hitman would disguise herself and get Selena involved, this is my bad. I have to say, I didn’t cause trouble. But if someone had come to pick a fight, I couldn’t let it slide either.

“If... I’m just giving an example here. If a mad person had come to you with a knife and wanted to kill you... Now, you didn’t provoke this man, would you retaliate?”

“You...” Fiona was speechless as Jack’s words made sense. However, she insisted, “I don’t care. Whatever it is, stop going around provoking people, even if it means you have to give in to them. Whoever hired the hitman could always hire another one after this failed attempt. I don’t care if you die... But what about my daughter?”

Jack thought she had a good point. “How about this, I’ll hire a bodyguard for Selena’s safety’s sake.”

“Bodyguard? Sure, you pay!” Fiona was a little stunt.

“Mm, don’t you worry about the money, I’ll pay!” Jack nodded.

Just as they were headed back home, an Audi stopped in front of their house. A man then walked toward them.

“Hey, is this not, Marshal Dennis?” Fiona recognized and gasped. Dennis had come with Ken to cause trouble here. However, Jack, as a veteran, had talked sense into them and made them leave. So, why was he there again?

“Gee... Not another hitman now, aye?” Fiona was scared sh*tless as she gulped. She ran toward Selena to signal her to get out of there.

Selena, on the other hand, was not worried. If it was not for Jack at that fighting ring, Dennis would be a long-dead man.

Chapter 395

So, Selena was certain that Dennis was not there for killing business. She was, however, perplexed by how he recovered so quickly so soon. He had serious injuries that day. She had estimated that Dennis would need to be bedridden for at least a fortnight. But look at him, he looked like a healthy young lad!

“What are you doing here?” Feeling scared, Fiona asked, “If you’re here for Jack, go ahead, it has nothing to do with us. Be clear with your target, he’s responsible for what he did, let him face the consequences, not us. Alright?”

Jack was dumbfounded by his mother-in-law’s actions.

“Jack, I’m here to thank you for that day!” Dennis intended to kneel before Jack but thought it was better for him not to as it might expose Jack’s true identity. So, he could only bow with his hands clasped.

Jack thought even that was unnecessary. Annoyed, he said, “Alright, what’s passed is past, there’s nothing to thank me for. Besides, it was such a dangerous situation. I’ll be ashamed of myself if I didn’t rescue you.”

“You’re right...” Dennis smiled as he presented a box to Selena. “Sis, Jack is my brother now, it’s only natural that I call you ‘sis’. Here’s a little gift for you, I hope you like it.”

“This...” Selena was shy. She looked at Jack, not knowing whether to accept the gift. At the same time, she was more shocked that Dennis, being a marshal himself, had addressed Jack as his ‘brother’. That was a lot of respect paid.

Then she thought Jack had saved Dennis’ life. So, it was no big deal for him to call Jack ‘brother’... Speaking of that, Jack was a lucky man indeed. O’Neal was already injured when Jack stepped into the ring and hit him one more time. Otherwise, Jack would be no match to O’Neal. O’Neal could have killed him, even!

“What are you waiting for? Thank the marshal now! It’s disrespectful to refuse the gift, you know?” Fiona nudged, her face filled with joy.

A marshal had just addressed Jack as ‘brother’, that was great news despite not knowing why Dennis did so. It seemed Dennis had owed Jack a favor. Most importantly, any gift from a marshal would be expensive. It was dumb if Jack declined it.

“Go ahead, take it! He came all the way to thank me and present you a gift, why not?” Jack advised.

“Thank you, Marshal Dennis!” Selena accepted the gift and smiled politely.

“you’re welcome. Jack had prescribed me medicine, and that saved my life. He is my brother now, I owe him my life. I’ll do as he says,” Dennis declared seriously.

“For real?” Jack was stunned.

Which to Dennis replied, “For real. I’m a man of my words!” Jack did not only save his life, Jack is the Supreme Warrior. Anyone would give their life up to a Superior Warrior.

“Very well. From today onward, you’ll be my wife’s bodyguard. You’ll keep her safe,” Jack requested.No.
1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 396-400

Chapter 396

“What?” When Fiona heard that, she was caught by surprise and took a deep breath.

She immediately stepped forward and glared at Jack angrily, “Jack, have you gone mad? I told you to find a bodyguard to protect my daughter, but you just found one casually? Do you even know who he is? He’s an officer, and a marshal at that, and you’re asking him to become a bodyguard?”

Having said that, she pulled Jack to stand in front of Dennis, “Hurry up and apologize to Marshal Dennis. Even if you’re fortunate enough to save his life by giving him some medicine, he’s already expressed his gratitude for that. What right do you have to ask him to be your bodyguard?”

Fiona was almost scared to death by Jack. This guy could actually spout such nonsense. Was he not aware of how powerful a marshal was? An officer, a marshal at that, countless people wanted to get into their good books.

However, Fiona did not expect Dennis to smile indifferently, “That’s not a problem, I’ll protect sister-in-law secretly. Of course, if you’re around, then I won’t be needed. I’ll most definitely try my best to protect her when she’s alone to and from work, or when she’s out alone.”

“Agreed, he agreed?” Fiona’s jaw dropped, wondering if she heard wrongly. Jack asked a marshal to protect her daughter, and the other party actually agreed to it. It was a miracle.

“Mother, I wasn’t looking for someone casually. You said to find a bodyguard for Selena. If I’m going to find one, I’ve to find a good one, right? Otherwise, what if the hitman hired by the other side happens to be very skillful? That’s why I thought Marshal Dennis is very suitable!” At this time, Jack grinned at Fiona, as if he was talking about something very trivial.

"Auntie, don't worry. From now on, I'm going to treat Jack as my brother. And as my brother, my life is his!" Dennis looked at Jack as he said this, his expression serious.

Fiona was overjoyed, but she still asked tentatively, "That's all fine, but you're a marshal after all, I'm afraid Jack can't afford your fees. How much monthly salary are you asking for?"

"you're too kind. Between us, there's no need to talk about salary. We're comrades after all!" Dennis laughed. He was very satisfied to be able to do something for Jack. Moreover, Jack had saved his life before, so he regarded this as repaying his gratitude.

Jack coughed awkwardly. Dennis was being too careless. If he refused to take any salary, would that not be too obvious?

"Oh, I'm not asking for much. Ten or twenty thousand will do!" Dennis quickly caught on and said.

"So little? Isn't that a disadvantage for you? You're a marshal!" Fiona was a little embarrassed. Ten to twenty thousand a month for a marshal to be a bodyguard to protect her daughter, and to protect herself and others by the way, it would be too cost-effective.

"I'm idle anyway. Since I don't have anything else to do, I'll just treat it as something to pass my time with!" Dennis chuckled.

"Let's agree on twenty thousand a month then. I'll transfer the money to you every month!"

After brief consideration, Jack spoke to Dennis and Fiona again, "By the way, since it's secret protection, it's best not to discuss this matter openly. If this information leaks out, and if there's really a hitman, the other party will be prepared for it or have a backup plan. It would be troublesome if the opponent engages any attack or defense strategies against us!"

In fact, Jack mainly said this to Fiona, in case she went out and bragged about the fact a marshal was

employed as their bodyguard.

“Sure, sure, I won’t say anything!” Fiona nodded immediately.

“Except for the few of us here, don’t even tell Clifford or the other about this!” Selena looked around and said.

“Don’t worry. I understand. I won’t say anything!”

Chapter 397

Fiona smiled and said, “Oh yes, Dennis, please have a seat inside. Do you want to have a few drinks too?”

“that won’t be necessary. It’s too late, I should go!” Dennis chuckled and soon drove away.

“Selena, let me see what that is?” Fiona was looking at the box in Selena’s hand. She was nearly dying from curiosity.

Selena opened the box and looked inside, “A jade bracelet. I think the material looks pretty good. I’m afraid it’s worth at least a few hundred thousand.”

“No way, so expensive!” Fiona drew in a cold breath, “Dennis is too generous!” Having said that, she turned her attention towards Jack, “Jack, you lucky boy, saving the life of Dennis. It seems to me that your medical skills are really good. Besides, he has even referred to you as his brother. It must be a blessing from your ancestors!”

“I’m just lucky!” Jack chuckled before entering the house.

Looking at Jack's retreating back, Fiona shrugged and helped Selena put on the bracelet, "This bracelet looks really good on you! It's a pity I can't tell anyone that a marshal is our bodyguard. It's really suffocating. I can't even brag about it to my friends."

"Ah, just keep a low profile. What's there to brag about?" Selena sighed, at a loss on how to respond.

...

At this time, Ivan called Ken and Neil out.

"Young Master Taylor, how come you're so free to invite us for drinks?" Neil smiled before he continued, "The hitman said that Jack will be killed within five days. Two days have passed, I wonder if she has taken any action?"

"Yeah, I really look forward to the day for Jack to be killed!" Ken started laughing.

Ivan's expression was ominous, "The other party has already taken action!"

"Really? How was it? It must be a success, right? She's very skillful and good at transfiguration. I didn't expect that she could do it so soon," Neil was overjoyed and looked at Ivan expectantly.

"She's quick to take action and quick to die too!" Ivan picked up the glass of red wine in front of him and downed it in one gulp.

"What? Jack died that quickly? That's too good for him. D*mmit, he should be tortured before being killed!"

When Ivan heard that, he could not help but sneer, "Yeah, we forgot to instruct the hitman to torture that guy first. It's best to take a video of him kneeling and begging for his life so that we could watch it!"

Ken was also a little resentful, thinking that Jack had gotten off too easily.

“what the hell were you thinking about? D*mmmit, I was talking about the hitman. She died too quickly!” Ivan smiled bitterly as he spoke, but in his heart, he was at a loss on how to react, “It’s still fine for her to die, but the point is, she kidnapped Selena this morning, and my contract ended up not being signed. When I returned home, the other family members actually made fun of me.”

“What!” Ken and Neil exclaimed in unison, wondering if their ears were playing tricks on them.

Chapter 398

“No, that can’t be. Isn’t she ranked the fifth on the hitman leaderboard in the southwest district? Didn’t she claim she could face a marshal head-on?” After a long while, with his mouth twitching slightly, Neil turned to Ivan and said, “Young Master Taylor, you can’t be kidding, right? If he can’t be killed like this, you’ll have your work cut out for you. It’s more difficult to kill him than reaching the heavens!”

“That’s right, Young Master Taylor. You must be joking. She can even transfigure herself. Under such circumstances, isn’t it a piece of cake to get rid of Jack?” Ken was still baffled.

“maybe if she didn’t transfigure herself or engage in any elaborate killing rituals, she might succeed in killing Jack! Who’d expect that woman to transfigure herself as Selena and kidnap her? Based on her past killing patterns, she must be planning to kill Jack in front of Selena. But something happened in the process. That woman gave the game away and Jack found out about it. As a result, not only did Jack not expose her, but he went along with it and killed her when she was caught unawares. So you tell me, if a hitman was unprepared, isn’t that the same as losing her life?” Ivan sneered and gulped down another glass of red wine that was just filled up. “What rotten luck. F*ck!”

“I...” Neil was at a loss for words. “What kind of hitman is this? She’s too careless to get spotted by Jack. I guess Jack must have launched a sneak attack on her after he found out. Otherwise, he’s not a match for her in a fair fight!”

“That’s right. Jack is simply too lucky. This hitman likes playing tricks and ended up killing herself. If they went head-on against each other, Jack is most definitely not an opponent!” Ken smiled bitterly too.

“Take the last time when Jack fought at the arena as an example of his lucky streak. Dennis had beaten O’Neal within an inch of his life when Jack just finished him with one kick. and Here I was thinking that Jack was a tough opponent and strong in combat. He only kicked that person’s neck, but it ended up with the chest and other areas exploding from the impact, and those were the areas hit by Dennis in the first place! Obviously, the opponent’s death was not caused by Jack!” Neil explained helplessly. Although he was unwilling to concede, he did not have a choice. Jack always had good luck.

“Sigh, let’s talk about our next steps!” Ivan sighed, but something occurred to him and he stood up quickly with a slap on his forehead, “Oh yes, I almost forgot, didn’t you give me that drug? let’s figure out a way to let Jack drink it, and our problem will be solved!”

“That’s a bit difficult, right? When we used one hundred million to engage Fiona the last time, it ended up a failure too!” Ken frowned in dejection.

“of course the plan would fail if you got her to do it. Not only is she greedy, but she’s also a coward. Do you understand? There’s one person who can definitely do the job. Furthermore, she’s now my girlfriend!” Ivan chuckled, took out his phone, called Xena, and told her to come over.

After the call, he turned back to the other two, “Most importantly, the two of you must keep this matter a secret. Her identity must not be revealed!”

“Who’s that?” Neil looked confused.

“You’ll find out when she gets here. she’s a beauty too. Tsk, tsk, and she tastes amazing!” Ivan smirked and could not help licking his lips.

After a while, Xena, wearing a sexy dress, came into the private room.

“Here, let me introduce you. This is Young Master Ken Clark, and this is Young Master Neil Hugo!” Ivan

stood up and introduced them with all smiles. “And this is my girlfriend, Xena Jackson!”

Chapter 399

“It’s a pleasure to meet the two young masters. Here, let me give you a toast!” Xena smiled and poured herself a glass of red wine.

Of course, she was ecstatic. These two were the young masters of a second-class aristocratic family. By following Ivan, she could get in touch with people of a higher status, certainly much better than with Ben. She, Xena Jackson, had finally entered the upper-class social circle.

“Xena Jackson, why do I find this name familiar?” Ken frowned as he sipped his red wine. Very quickly, his eyes lit up. “Now I remember. Aren’t you Ben Taylor’s girlfriend?”

“yeah, she used to be, but not anymore!” Ivan laughed. “She’s my woman now, but for the time being, she has to stay with that useless Ben to collect some information for us. Besides, for some of the things that Fiona can’t do for us, Xena can definitely do it!”

Xena rolled her eyes seductively at Ivan. “You’re so mean. What else do I have to do? I thought you asked me out to have fun, but it turns out that you want me to do something for you!”

“of course we’re here to enjoy ourselves!” Ivan laughed and pressed a kiss on Xena’s cheek, before taking out a small packet, “This is a type of drug, but don’t worry, the person won’t die immediately after taking it. It’s colorless and odorless. After consuming it, that person will take about a month to die. Before that, the person will become thinner and weaker, feeling weak in the limbs as if they were ill. Even the doctors won’t be able to trace it!”

“My goodness, there’s such a powerful drug?” Xena took a deep breath and frowned. “Let me guess, who are you going to give this drug to? Well, it should be Jack, right? After all, Young Master Clark and Young Master Hugo seem to like Selena, so it can’t be her. It must be Jack that you want to get rid of, right?”

“Babe, you’re so smart. I’ve not even said anything yet, and you’ve guessed it all! I must reward you properly tonight!” Ivan was very pleased. He hugged Xena around her waist and kissed her cheek again.

“It’s a promise!” Xena blushed and said bashfully.

“Of course. We’ll find a hotel later and have a good rest. Tomorrow morning, I’ll transfer one million for you to pamper yourself! After you’ve given this drug to Jack successfully, I’ll buy you a villa of your choice. How about that?” Ivan smiled.

“A villa? Really? I want a better one, not the ones out in the suburbs!” Xena’s eyes lit up immediately. A better villa would not be worth one or two million, but rather, seven or eight million. At least, it would be considered pretty good in a place like Eastfield, and ordinary people would not be able to afford a place like that in their lifetime.

“That goes without saying. For you, everything must be the best!” Ivan felt a bit excited as he saw Xena keeping the packet of drug.

If Jack could be dealt with by using such a small amount of money, it would definitely be worth it. After all, one hundred and fifty million did not achieve that result. Ken and Neil exchanged a gleeful look. They had to admit that Ivan’s idea was pretty good.

Chapter 400

“Oh yes, Young Master Taylor, I think it’s best for Miss Jackson not to take any action recently!”

After thinking for a while, Neil continued, “They just met the hitman after all, so we have already disturbed the hornet’s nest. Jack must be on his guard already. If we act now, I’m afraid we’d get into trouble if anything goes wrong!”

Xena also nodded repeatedly. “I agree, especially since I’m on bad terms with Jack, he might be wary of me. Another point is that Jack is a smart guy and not easy to deal with. So, we should wait for a while until they relax their vigilance!”

Ivan thought for a moment before he said, "Let's wait until Grandpa Taylor's seventieth birthday is over. By that time, if Jack can't pay me ten million in compensation or can't come up with a gift worth ten million, he will be forced to divorce Selena and get kicked out of the Taylor family anyway!" Speaking of this, Ivan smiled. "In that case, then there's no need to administer the drug to him. But if he can do it by then, after the birthday party, you'll think of a way to give him the drug. After one month, he'll slowly die."

"Oh no, if he's going to divorce Selena and get kicked out of the Taylor family, I don't have to give him the drug. Then, Young Master Taylor won't buy me a villa?" That occurred to Xena very quickly and she was a little unhappy.

"that won't do. Of course, I'll still buy it for you. You're my girlfriend, my woman! If Jack was kicked out after the birthday party, I'll buy you a villa as a celebration! If he's not kicked out, then we'll wait until you give him the drug before I buy one for you as a reward. How about that?" Ivan said with a smile. Xena was not stupid. If she was being used without giving her any benefit, what would he do if she exposed such things in the future?

Therefore, Ivan would not pinch on the hush money that was meant for her. Besides, this woman looked great. Putting aside the possibility of getting married to her in the future, it was still good to have fun with her now. He was even looking forward to seeing Ben's reaction when he found out he was cuckolded.

"let's have a drink at the bar. It won't be long before the Old Master's birthday party. At that time, I'll come and have a look too!" Neil laughed before he continued, "Recently, I've sent people to watch Jack in secret too, to see if he went into any luxury stores or bought any gifts worth tens of millions. However, except for going to and from work, it seems like that guy didn't go into any expensive jade shop or gold shops!"

"Yeah, a gift worth ten million isn't that easy to purchase, right? Unless it's an antique!" Ken also laughed heartily.

With that plan in mind, they were not so worried anymore.

The next day, Selena went to work early in the morning. Dennis drove secretly and escorted her to the company before leaving. Ivan and Janet soon appeared in Selena's office. This time, they finally met Selena and the signing of the contract went smoothly.

At noon, Jack received a call from Dennis asking him out.

"What's up? Are you looking for me?" After arriving at a coffee shop and sitting down, Jack asked Dennis.

"How do I put it? It's not a big deal, but I think I should tell you about it and let you decide if you are interested to go!" Dennis smiled before he continued, "Tomorrow, one of the Kings of War, Magnus Sutherland, will be holding a congregation at the Carefree Manor as a meeting of the comrades to strengthen our network and friendship. He'll be responsible for all the expenses and just hope that some of the comrades can participate. I know that many assistant commanders, head commanders, and marshals will be going, and a few kings of war will be joining too!"

"Sure, it's a good gathering for all the brothers who fought in arms. Having a few drinks together is a great thing!" Jack nodded with satisfaction at that information.

"Well, I heard that he has invited the Goddess of War too, so I wonder if Goddess Lana will turn up! As for you, they didn't know that such a great person like you is in Eastfield, so they didn't invite you!"